

War of the Supreme Mysteries

 *Readlists*

War of the Supreme Mysteries

War of the Supreme Mysteries (太玄战记) is a Chinese Light Novel (Classic Xian Xia Genre), the author is 风御九秋, there really isn't a publisher, but it is officially released at 17k.com , it was first released this year, it is posted daily and has 174 chapters as of 10/20/2015.

Synopsis : Donford Wu, a military specialist part of the special troops, Cheetah Troops, was accidentally transported back in time 4000 years ago to the Xia dynasty while on a mission. There he experiences the mysteries of Qi and the lonely road of cultivation.

Raw : <http://www.17k.com/book/1254969.html>

Translator : RandomDudeTranslator

War of the Supreme Mysteries Glossary

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/war-of-the-supreme-mysteries-glossary/>

B

Bottomless Upwards Spreader – The Wood clan Celestial Masters can make the grass and trees around them quickly grow, rising them into the air. Upwards Spreader is a name of a deity tree to their east side, it can grow really high. So that's why this kind of magic is called the Bottomless Upwards Spreader.

C

Clans-There are five clans, Fire clan, Water Clan, Gold Clan, Earth Clan, Wood Clan

Celestial Master – The most powerful shamans, borrowing the power of deities, they are called Celestial Masters.

D

Donford Wu – MC

E

Earth Clan, the clan in the center, no tattoos.

F

Fire Clan, the clan on the south side, adult male clan members have a fire tattoo on their chest, while shamans have a vermillion bird tattoo on their chest. (Walda Ming indicates that this clan is the most violent)

Food Dump – Panda (Aka Pi Xiu) that was picked up by Donford Wu after its mother died from a snake bite. Next Celestial Master of the White Tiger's mount.

Fury Blaze Dance – The Fire clan Celestial Masters can cover themselves in flames, allowing them to fly through the air, that's why it is called the Fury Blaze Dance.

G

Gold Clan, the clan on the west side, adult male clan members have a small sword tattoo on their chest, while shamans have a white tiger tattoo on their chest. (Walda Ming indicates that this clan is the weakest)

H

L

Languages, Xi Ya and Me Li

Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds – A body technique used by the Gold clan's Celestial Masters to fly through the air. The Gold clan Celestial Masters can control metals to fly through the air, when moving at quick speeds, thunder would sound, so that's why it's called the Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds

M

Me Li, the universal language in the Xia dynasty

Mia Si – Earth clan lady shaman that tried to assassinate the babies of the Gold clan village that Donford Wu first lived next to.

N

P

Pi Xiu – Known as the son of dragons in modern times, in this LN they mean pandas before they only ate bamboo.

Q

R

Returning To The Heavens And Earth – The Earth clan Celestial Masters don't need anything to go into the skies and escape from the earth. This kind of magic is called by them Returning To The Heavens And Earth.

S

Shamans – Shamans are like lead, manage, protects and acts as a barefoot doctor. Shamans are also split into three different rankings, Shamans, Sages, and Celestial Masters.

Shaman – Shamans of a village are called shamans.

Sages – Shaman of a tribe are called Sages

T

W

Walda Ming – Saved by Donford Wu, also taught Donford Wu the language of Me Li.

Water clan, the clan on the north side, adult male clan members have a tattoo regarding water on their chest, while shamans have a black turtle tattoo on their

chest. (Walda Ming indicates that this clan is the most mysterious)

Wood clan, the clan on the east side, adult male clan members have a tattoo regarding wood on their chest, while shamans have a azure dragon tattoo on their chest. (Walda Ming indicates that this clan is the most peaceful)

Weak Water Dragon's Twirl – The Water clan Celestial Masters can shift and drive the waters of rivers, lakes and oceans to form a rapid swirling water column to rise into the air. Because the water column's shape looks very similar to a tornado, that's why it is called the Weak Water Dragon's Twirl.

X

Xia dynasty, the period of time that Donford Wu is currently in.

Xi Ya, language only used in the east, north and central.

Y

Yaara Ming – Lady shaman of the village that Donford Wu first lived next to

Z

Chapter 1: Special Mission

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-1/>

Chapter 1 Special Mission

One of the People's Liberation Army south west bases, residences, three in the morning.

"Donford Wu (Wu Dong Fang)!" A knock came from outside the door.

"Here!" after the loud reply, the room's door was pulled open from the inside, a young man wearing jeans peeked his head out.

"Did you wash your feet yesterday?" The major outside slid into the room, turned on the lights, and turned around towards a window and opened it.

"I don't even have a girlfriend, why would i do that." Donford Wu walked over to the major and took the notebook from his hands, after graduating from the military academy three years ago, he has encountered these kind of situations multiple times, when the squadron commander or a commander comes over in the middle of the night with a notebook in hand, it must be a mission, and the summary of the mission would be written in the notebook.

"You're always this drabby, you won't ever get a girlfriend." The squadron commander took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it.

"This isn't called drabby, it's called a man's smell." Donford Wu snatched the cigarette from the squadron commander's mouth, "The cheetah troops are forbidden from smoking, as the leader, you should be a role model."

The squadron commander did not give a shit and lit another one.

After quickly scanning the contents of the notebook, Donford Wu slightly frowned, this time it was a drug trafficker mission, these kind of things were normally taken care of by the local anti-narcotics police and the special police force, and not the spec-ops.

"You're good in the forest, you lead, the plane is taking off in twenty minutes, later, there will be more detailed information sent, you should go and read it on

the plane.” The squadron commander said.

“The anti-narcotics police and the special police force are fully capable of dealing with these kinds of matters, why would they send us?” Donford Wu twitched his mouth while asking.

“They have more than forty people on their side, and they are armed, it is more suitable if we take over.” The squadron commander said.

“The special police force are only able to take care of people with knives?” Donford Wu smothered the cigarette and put on a vest.

The squadron commander stood up, “Their operation habits scared them off, bring the drugs back, but this time, not only do you have to bring them back, you have to finish off all the dealers, that way we can frighten off other traffickers.”

“Understood.” Donford Wu put on suitable pants and shouted outside the door, “Third Squad take your weapons, we are setting off in five minutes.”

When the squadron commander woke Donford Wu from bed, the three combat squads all woke up waiting for orders, after Donford Wu shouted, the corresponding combat squad immediately rushed from the residence towards the troop’s weapons locker.

“Gabe Zhang (Zhang Zhi), you haven’t graduated for long and you aren’t familiar with the situation, the mission this time is very dangerous, you should not go.” Donford Wu blocked off the last second lieutenant running off.

The second lieutenant that was blocked did not understand, he looked dumbfounded at Donford Wu, and then turned to look at the squadron commander in the room.

The squadron commander extinguished the cigarette and walked out, he reached out and pulled out the epaulettes on the second lieutenant’s shoulders, “When carrying out a mission, you must not wear your epaulettes, you can not let the adversaries know that you are the commander.”

The second lieutenant quickly nodded his head.

“Go.” The squadron commander encouragingly patted the second lieutenant’s epaulettes.

He then ran off, Donford Wu shooked his head towards the squadron commander, "Training and war are two different things, that fellow's EQ isn't good."

"There is always a first time for everything." The squadron commander clapped his hands together, "and anyway, you're now the deputy squadron commander, he is the squad leader of third squad, what are you planning to do by making him stay here?"

Donford Wu just shook his head, the third squad was always under his command, last month, there was an adjustment of positions, he was promoted to deputy squadron commander, after that, Gabe Zhang has taken over the third squad, this was Gabe Zhang's first mission, fighting against forty armed men in a dense forest is not a good opportunity for a rookie.

"I'll go and bring the faxed information over to you." The squadron commander trotted away.

Donford Wu went back into the room and pocketed the cigarette, he then took out a recording device and went to the second floor weapon locker, at this time, the soldiers have all put on bullet proof vests, spec-ops' bullet proof vests are a lot more lighter than one's used by normal police officers, it is worn under the camouflage .

The soldiers all have practical experience, they were clear in what kind of equipment they need, Donford Wu was checking the amount of the different explosives, bullets, etc. that needed to be brought and also told the soldiers if they needed special gear.

Fifteen minutes later, a fully equipped squad was lined up, Donford Wu gave the recorder to Gabe Zhang, going out on a mission is the same as going to battle, and in accordance to the rules, everyone must say a few words, in case they don't come back, this was their last words.

Gabe Zhang took the recorder and pressed the record button, "Mother, father,I'm going on a mission today, don't worry about me, no matter how dangerous the mission is, I have confidence in accomplishing it, it is impossible to be loyal to the country and be faithful to my parents, if anything happens to me, you need to take care of yourself second brother."

After coming to this part, Gabe Zhang paused for a moment, and then continued, "My love Lin, it is uncertain if i live or die, no matter what happens, i will always love you."

After Gabe Zhang finished up, laughter came from within the squad, hearing this, Gabe Zhang's face turned red and hurriedly passed the recorder down.

"Victorious!" "Victorious!" "Victorious!" "Victorious!" "Victorious!"
"Victorious!" "Victorious!" "Victorious!" "Victorious!"

Nine cries showed the squad's determination, making Gabe Zhang extremely embarrassed, and he couldn't stop himself from showing it.

Seeing Gabe Zhang was incomparably embarrassed, Donford didn't follow procedure and shout victorious, but instead; took the recorder and quickly said, "In my room, the half bottle of Maotai (alcohol) hidden on top of the shelf, my paycard is under the pants, if I really am that lucky, then give the Maotai to the commander and the money to third aunt."

After finishing up, Donford Wu gave the recorder to the squadron commander, and took the faxed information from his hands, he then waved his hands at the squad and said, "Get on."

"Who was this third aunt that the deputy squadron commander talked about?" Gabe Zhang quietly asked the soldier beside him.

"Boss' foster mother, a kind old widow." The soldier casually replied.

When the squad got on, the two military jeeps sped away towards the military airport.

"Why are you going back there and not to the duty room?" Donford Wu turned his body around and shouted towards the squadron commander who was heading back to the residence.

"Looking for dirty items." The squadron commander laughed.

"I drank from the bottle, i even spit into it, hey, hey, hey, did you hear me....."

The military airport was not far from the residence, a small airplane that was all prepped was waiting for them, after everyone got on, the airplane immediately took off.

Donford Wu looked down at the fax, even though the fax had three pages, they were all mostly just the identity of the drug traffickers, their criminal record, and a description of their appearance, he didn't look at any of these, what he was concerned about was information regarding the mission, this time, the adversaries had forty four men, all with pistols, rifles, and large amounts of grenades, they were bringing over two hundred kilos of opium.

Among the forty four people was an undercover anti narcotics police informant, this information was provided by the informant last night before he set off. Except for the mastermind, while trafficking the drugs, no one was allowed to bring any communication tools, that is why their only trail was the tracker hidden on the informant's body.

After Donford finished reading the info, he passed it over to Gabe Zhang. He then turned around to the soldier who had the imaging equipment to determine the current position of the informant, according to his current position, the drug traffickers were still in the borders of China.

"Boss, something's wrong, why did they turn around?" the soldier asked.

"Is the informant still alive?" Donford frowned while looking at the five inch wide colour monitor.

"The tracker is still slowly moving, he should still be alive." the soldier replied.

Hearing this information, Donford quickly considered multiple options, criminal gangs extremely hate undercover informants, once discovered, he would immediately be killed, if the informant was still alive, then that meant his identity wasn't exposed. If the informant's identity wasn't exposed, why would the drug traffickers turn back.

"Is our flight path conflicted with civilian airlines that are heading towards Myanmar?" Donford Wu rushed to the cockpit and shouted, the area that the adversaries are in is a dense forest, it is extremely hard to organize such a large scale round up, the only way to threaten them is to ambush them from the air.

"There was, before we lifted off, we have already requested the mission control of the airport to take care of it." The co-pilot took off his headphones, turned around and replied.

"The mission control would cause the flight to be delayed, the look outs at the airport would immediately notice them, this is the reason they turned around." Donford Wu took an educated guess.

"There are a lot of reasons for a flight to be delayed, just because a flight is delayed they turned around, wouldn't that be making a big fuss over a small matter?" Gabe Zhang said.

"Drug trafficking is a death sentence, if they are caught, they will be executed by firing squad, they don't dare not to be careful." Finishing up his sentence, Donford Wu turned his head around to the soldier with the imaging equipment, "How far are they from the borders?"

"Not anymore than thirty kilometers." the soldier replied.

"How long will it take for us to reach our destination?" Donford Wu turned his head towards the cockpit.

"About one hour." the co-pilot replied.

"At top speed, how long." Donford Wu continued.

The pilot turned his head around, "Half an hour, but the engine noise would be too loud, it would be very hard for them not to discover this."

Donford Wu looked at the soldiers, compared to a quiet ambush, with an open interception the risks are a lot higher, even though he can give the orders himself, he still would ask for opinions from the soldiers.

Donford Wu saw that all the soldiers nodded in agreement.

But Gabe Zhang had another opinion, "Should we ask the higher-ups?"

"It'll be too late." Donford Wu waved his hands and turned around towards the pilot and said, "Make the most of this half hour."

The plane increased its speed, the shaking of the plane clearly became more dramatic, all of them took out paint and painted their faces with camouflage. Twenty minutes later, near the destination, everyone got their parachutes ready to descend.

"Check the weapons and communicators again." Donford ordered.

"The informant's codename is 'grandmother's bear', don't accidentally hit him, all the other drug traffickers....." Donford made a slit throat hand sign.

"Deputy squadron commander, the higher ups want us to catch these criminals, not kill them all." Gabe Zhang took out the documents from his pocket.

Hearing this, Donford Wu slightly turned his head and glanced at Gabe Zhang, then turned and gave a glance at the soldiers by his side, the latter understood, he grabbed Gabe Zhang's helmet and smashed the back of his head against the plane walls, instantly making him faint.

"We can't let this idiot come with us, if not, he'll kill us all." The soldier that moved tightened Gabe Zhang's safety harness.

"The plane shook too badly, and second lieutenant accidentally hit his head and fainted." Donford Wu took out a cigarette, lit it and gave it a puff, he then handed it to the person next to him.

"Yeah, we all saw that." everyone laughed loudly.

"Squad Leader Wu, we have arrived, should we decline to eight hundred?" the co-pilot turned his head and asked.

"No need, when we're at twelve hundred meters, open the doors." Finishing his sentence, Donford Wu used a O shape to signal at the men, everyone nodded their head in understandment, by controlling the parachutes, they can descend to different areas, Donford Wu wanted everyone to spread around, encircling the enemy.

The doors slowly opened, the outside wind gushed inside.

"Protect our family, save our country!" Donford Wu shouted.

"Cheetah Victorious!" everyone replied.

Finishing their motto, all of them used the cabling to reach the plane doors one by one, they unlatched the safety and jumped off.

At this moment, lots of sparks of fire appeared in the dense forest below, adding to it was dense gunfire.....

Chapter 2: Old Fashioned Parachute

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-2/>

Chapter 2 Old Fashioned Parachute

Compared to a normal airliner, the plane's altitude was much lower, at this moment, the moon was still shining, the drug traffickers on the ground could see that people were coming down, they didn't know who they were, but they knew they weren't their friends.

The plane took a U-turn, the soldiers one by one jumped off the plane, Donford Wu was the last to jump, even though the drug traffickers shot at the plane, but it didn't cause any damage to the plane, when a 7.62 mm rifle shoots over eight hundred meters, its power starts to falter.

The bullets couldn't cause any damage to the plane, but it could threaten the descending soldiers, to insure their safety, all soldiers tried to open their parachute at the last possible second, this could decrease the amount of time spent in the air.

The borders between China and Myanmar was mostly made of ancient forests, these forests were extremely dense, after parachuting down, Donford Wu's parachute snagged on top of a tree, hanging him over the ground five or six meters.

The light under the forest was abnormally dim, Donford Wu used his rifle to quickly check his surrounding area, after determining his height from the ground, he unlocked his parachute and touched the ground rolling. Now in a crawling position, he used the tracker on his wrist to see his approximate location.

His position was slightly to the west, going west, you could reach the borders in less than five kilometers, the dense gunfire, which was the area where the drug traffickers were, was two kilometers to the east.

After determining his location, he didn't go to encircle them, but quickly got up and went west, after being assaulted, the drug traffickers would surely retreat

back to Myanmar, what he was doing was to become familiar with the surrounding area as fast as possible, and find a good position to assault them.

While looking at his surroundings, Donford Wu also determined the caliber of the rifles from the gunfire, the squad's QBZ-95 and the adversaries' AK-47 had different barrel sizes, the sound of the gun was also slightly different. Through the gunfire, when could determine that both sides were all on automatic, but the adversaries weren't just spraying gunfire, but clearly had rhythm, this showed that they weren't just grouped together, but highly possible they were mercenaries with formal training.

At this moment, there were only three soldiers that were behind the enemy in the firefight, their main objective was to slow down the enemy so that they could make time for their comrades that were in the front, left and right encircle the enemy. The six soldiers on the left and right were to kill the enemy's main firepower, their mission was to ambush the enemy when they are retreating, snipers and combat crossbowmen were both on the two sides. Donford Wu was the last line of defense, he was responsible for blocking the fish that escaped from the net.

As Donford Wu was quickly heading west, his earpiece transmitted a soldier's voice, "They're quickly retreating."

Even though Donford Wu was anxious, but he didn't urge his squad to hurry, all the communication devices were all connected, the soldiers on the two sides would surely rapidly get to their combat position.

Different from the normal mountains and outbacks, the borders between China and Myanmar had a real ancient forest, it was hot and humid, you could find little traces of people, the giant trees block your path, the thorns sting your legs, going through this place was abnormally hard and painful, but what Donford Wu feared was not these, but Asia's most venomous snake that lived in this area, the king cobra.

The two sides finally sounded gunfire, the snipers and crossbowmen held their position and showed their might, the soldiers using rifles were in direct combat facing the enemy, while the snipers and crossbowmen stealthily killed them, even though the crossbows had shorter range, but it had its own advantage, it

shot without noise, and there are no sparks to be seen, especially suitable for a night forest battle.

Being surrounded, the enemy started throwing hand grenades to counter attack and at the same time accelerated their retreat.

After a few hundred meters, Donford Wu finally found the hidden trail in the forest, behind him, there was still the dense sound of gunfire, clearly showing that there were still lots of enemies that have not been killed. After thinking for a short period of time, Donford Wu followed the trail and ran west, if he went back to block the trail, he would force the drug traffickers off the trail, making them hard to find.

Less than a mile from the border, Donford Wu ordered, "How many left."

"Seems to be seven." "It should be three." "Around four or five."

"I'm about to reach the border." Donford Wu cut off the soldiers counting, in this dark forest, it was hard to determine the exact amount of enemies killed, making it also hard to calculate how many enemies were left.

Not knowing the amount of enemies left was impossible to directly confront them, if there were only three or five people left, he had confidence to kill them before they disappeared through the forest, but if it was more, it was hard not to let some escape.

After thinking about this, Donford Wu hid himself in a secluded place fifty meters away from the trail.

In a moment, the enemies came rushing here, the ones running in the front were all wearing vests, these vests were sewed out of coarse materials, and they were bulging out, the drugs were highly likely to be stored there, behind them were ten plus mercenaries wearing camouflage, their gunfire covering the drug trafficker's retreat.

Donford Wu was waiting for the drug traffickers to pass him so he can open fire at the mercenaries, he had set his rifle to automatic.

Compared against single bursts, fully automatic was much more powerful, it could kill more enemies, but it also came with more risks, because shooting automatic required one to stay in the shooting stance, the barrel also continues

to spark, there was no way to hide, so the enemies could fire right back at him right away.

The longer he shot in automatic, the more enemies he killed, and the more danger he put himself in, this is a time which tested a person's courage and judgment, Donford Wu shot for five seconds, the first second of the five, he was safe, the following four seconds, he had a chance to be shot.

After five seconds, Donford Wu immediately lied down, the enemy's' gunfire quickly followed, a spray of bullets flew over his head, he laid closely to the ground, waiting until the gunfire stopped, he immediately rolled to the south western side, his opponents knew where he was, to ensure he was dead, they would most likely throw a hand grenade.

Donford Wu's guess was right, the opponents really did want to throw a grenade, but while trying to throw it, the mercenary got shot and killed by a far away sniper, the remaining two mercenaries were in a panic, they rushed away and tried to escape from the explosion,

The grenade exploded, it sended out a low sound and a short period of light, Donford Wu quickly got up, he raised his rifle and finished off the other two mercenaries, he then turned around to chase the far away drug traffickers.

"Boss, Grandmother's Bear is with me." his earpiece sent a soldier's voice.

"And I thought he already died." Donford Wu sighed crudely.

"Boss, you are five hundred meters away from the border." The correspondent with the GPS quickly reminded him.

At this moment, all his squad members were all behind him, only Donford Wu was in the front, and because he didn't participate in the firefight, Donford Wu's stamina was still full, he quickly rushed through the forest.

One of the drug traffickers heard the explosion from behind, he slightly turned his body and shot wherever, he was using a handgun, not only did that bullet not hit Donford Wu, but also exposed his position, letting Donford Wu kill him.

The trail made by the drug traffickers was curved, narrow and surrounded by a dense forest, but the remaining three drug traffickers didn't go hid, but desperately ran west, they knew if they crossed the borders they were safe.

In a normal situation, drug traffickers could not outrun a trained soldier, but when their lives are threatened, it is another story. The drug traffickers threw down all their equipment and ran. They were very familiar with the geography, not only that, Donford Wu was unable to run at full speed because of the winding mountain trail, even his two shots could not hit his targets.

“Boss, you can’t run anymore!” his earpiece sounded the correspondent’s voice.

At this time, the east was already bright, Donford could clearly see the border pillar on the ground, similar border pillars could be found every few kilometers, they were the mark of the border.

Donford Wu regretted greatly that he was not able to chase the remaining three drug traffickers, but the border pillar was fully in his sight, normal people crossing the borders at most would be illegal immigration, but when a soldier crosses the border would mean invading on another country’s territory.

The other soldiers finally caughted up, Donford Wu already started to dip his head down, the squad one after another comforted him, “Boss, we tried our best.” “Who would’ve thought they would pay attention to civilian airlines.” “It’s all my fault, I got to my position too late.”

“They already ran off, but we killed a lot.” Donford Wu gave his rifle to one of the soldiers, taking out a dagger, he crouched down and cut open one of the vests the drug traffickers threw away, from inside, he took out a piece of black substance and sniffed it.

“Boss, is it opium?” a soldier asked.

“I don’t know this, but I’m sure it’s not medicine for your health, where’s Grandmother’s Bear, let him determine what it is.” Donford Wu casually said.

After saying this, a middle aged man wearing camo walked out from the group, Donford Wu turned his head to look at this person, at this moment, from the west, a gunshot resounded through the air, following the gunshot, Grandmother’s Bear’s left eye exploded, the back of his head spraying out a red mist.

Hearing the gunshot, everyone spread out and hid, at the same time unlocking

the safety and getting ready to fire.

“Fuck his motherfucking bitch!” before Grandmother’s Bear could fall down, Donford Wu rushed forward, he knew clearly what was happening, drug traffickers hated undercover informants the most, this must have been the reason that they crossed the borders and came back daringly.

Seeing Donford Wu rushing forward, the other soldiers didn’t dare open fire, they turned back on the safety and followed.

After a few meters, the drug trafficker that opened fired once again went back into the borders of Myanmar. Everyone had a location tracking device on their bodies that were connected with headquarters, once they crossed the borders, headquarters would immediately know.

Donford Wu pushed away a soldier pulling at him and once again rushed forward.

Seeing this situation, everyone came rushing forward, Donford Wu looked back at flicked his hand, “You guys can’t break the rules, go back!”

Stopping everyone, Donford Wu slowed down his pace, he was on alert for an ambush and at the same time looking for traces of his opponents.

Sneaking in for hundreds of meters, he couldn’t find a trace of his enemies, but he did find a winding trail in the forest.

Following near the trail and heading west for a few minutes, Donford Wu heard footsteps on the other side of the trail, after a moment, a black painted drug trafficker walked onto the trail.

Seeing him in his line of fire, Donford raised his handgun and opened fire, he continually shot three times, every shot was lethal.

After the gunshots, hurried footsteps sounded not too far away from the west, without asking, one could know that the other two drug traffickers that were resting started running again after hearing the gunshots.

Donford Wu chased after the noise of footsteps, because the forest had a lot of leaved vegetation, the drug traffickers were not far, but could not be seen. Donford Wu could only open fire according to the foot steps.

The drug traffickers started to open fire to retaliate, the bullets from both sides were mostly all blocked by the trees, after a few rounds, no one was even hurt.

While following them, they gave up the trail and started heading south, the trees in the forest started to decrease, Donford Wu could finally see their shadows, he quickly took aim and killed one of the traffickers.

The last drug trafficker desperately ran south, Donford Wu also hurriedly followed, the more south they went, the less vegetation there was, both sides didn't open fire, after a few rounds of shooting, both men had no bullets left.

The chase continued for five or six minutes, the drug trafficker in the front suddenly stopped by a boulder, Donford Wu thought that what was hiding under there was a gun, but what the drug trafficker pulled out was an old fashioned parachute, while he backpacked it, he rushed towards a cliff on the south side.

"What a genius!" Donford Wu coldly laughed, these drug traffickers did death sentence business, they used all their brains to leave a way for them to live.

The drug trafficker stopped by the edge of the cliff, he turned around and spited at the rushing Donford Wu, he then waved his right hand with his middle finger sticking up.

This insulting hand sign did not anger Donford Wu, even though he didn't know the geography down the cliff, but he has been trained in two man parachuting.

After insulting Donford Wu, the drug trafficker turned around, jumped off and opened his parachute, Donford Wu quickly followed, in the middle of the air he hugged the drug trafficker, he then pulled out a dagger and stabbed him in the left chest.

The drug trafficker started to violently struggle, Donford Wu used his hands to tightly stop his opponent, at this moment, an accidental discovery made his spine shiver, there was something moving in the parachute between the two men.....

Chapter 3 Going Through Space and Time

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-3/>

Chapter 3 Going Through Space and Time

Donford Wu was not afraid of the animal inside the parachute bag, but was afraid of what kind of damages would it do to the parachute itself. The parachute inside the bag is pressured in very tightly, only animals from the rodent or pangolin species could squeeze inside, no matter which kind of animal it was, the parachute would have sustained serious damage.

After being alarmed , Donford Wu quickly calmed down, looking down, he could only see the lingering mist below, completely unable to see the situation at the bottom of the valley and also unable to determine how far away he was away from the ground.

Seeing that the situation was unclear, Donford Wu could only guess, most of the mountains at the borders of Myanmar were around two thousand meters, at this height, a parachute that has been damaged is absolutely unable to smoothly bring two people down to the bottom of the valley.

He has two options, one is to descend with two people, once they are close to the ground, open the parachute as the first buffer, then when the parachute loses effect, use the drug trafficker's body as the second buffer, and then land.

There is also a second choice, which is to take off the parachute bag away from the drug trafficker, shoulder it and descend by himself. This way, it can decrease the acceleration towards the ground, while decreasing the amount of weight the parachute has to bear.

Donford Wu choose the second option without a doubt, even though the chance of survival is larger, but the amount of danger is also larger too. Changing parachutes while in mid-air, if he doesn't wear the parachute correctly before using it, he would easily just die by the fall.

After making up his mind, Donford Wu quickly released the parachute buckles and kicked away the drug trafficker's body. With his back facing the ground,

using his fastest speed, he put on the parachute bag and quickly spread out his limbs afterwards, through increasing resistance, Donford Wu can decrease the speed while falling.

The mist below was thicker than he expected, while he was falling, he was completely unable to see his surroundings and the ground below. This situation made Donford Wu secretly cry out in bitterness. Without knowing what his altitude was, he is unable to know what time he should pull open his parachute at.

Waiting.

Waiting again.

Still the same, waiting.

After every second, the stress on Donford Wu's heart increased, he didn't know at what height the mist would clear, waiting for the results, might cause him to die, or maybe even increase his survival probability.

Just when Donford Wu's tension reached an incomparable high, the mist suddenly vanished, and in front of him was a stretch of flat farmland, large petals of safflower indicated that the crops grown here were most likely poppies.

What Donford Wu cared for was not what kind of crop was grown, but what height he was at. Being able to clearly see what is below said that his height was incredibly close, it was evident that he missed the best opportunity to open his parachute, he can not open his parachute any longer.

Pulling the activation string, the parachute opened up smoothly, but after the main parachute decreased most of the momentum, Donford Wu was not pulled back up in the air, this was clearly the result of the parachute being damaged.

With the parachute failing, Donford Wu did a series of movement seconds before landing.

Throw away the parachute and flip over, preventing the possibility of broken ribs stabbing into his lungs.

Both hands around his head, decrease the impact on his head.

Relaxing muscles, getting ready to crash.

Breathing out, to avoid air trembling violently, causing internal damage to organs.

He could only do this, if he wanted to survive this fall, he could only count on the softness of the ground.

“Plop!”

“Why is it water?” Doubt has already crept into his mind, his back and two legs already hitting a hard substance.

After choking on a bit of water, Donford Wu quickly swam upwards, his left calf sended out a terrible pain and a tingling feeling, indicating that the bones were most likely fractured.

The water wasn't deep, Donford Wu was able to surface rather quickly, just when he wanted to breath, the scene around him caused him to suck in a breath of cold air (TL: something surprising), the poppy fields that he saw was gone without a trace, what it was replaced by was a gentle moving stream, a mess of rocks on both sides made up the shore on both sides.

Donford Wu immediately took in his surroundings, turning his head, he discovered that a woman was standing in shallow water not 10 meters away from him, her hand holding a sharpened wooden pool, slack jawed, she was staring directly at him.

After determining that she did not have any hostility and only surprise by her expression, Donford Wu didn't look at the woman for long, because except for a shabby piece of rags around her waist, there was nothing else.

Until Donford Wu crawled onto shore with great difficulty, did the woman wake from her stupor, leaving the stream behind and heading into a forest on the west side.

The intercom was sweep away by the wind long before, but good thing that the positioning device was still there, but at that moment, he could only see his own latitude and longitude coordinates, and unable to see his squad's coordinates.

With his heart filled with doubt, Donford Wu stood up with a single leg, taking in the surrounding mountains, the surrounding terrain was around seven to

eighty percent the same as when he fought the drug traffickers, but the peaks were now higher, and the forest is much thicker.

When he looked at the position of the sun in the sky, Donford took in another cold breath, even though the amount of light was around the same when he jumped off the cliff, but according to the position the sun is at right now, it wasn't morning now, but rather close to night time.

After all these strange things happened, Donford Wu wasn't excessively frightened, he took out a box of cigs and picked one that wasn't wet, he smoked while remembering what exactly happened.

Before he opened his parachute, he clearly remember that what was below him were poppy fields, but at last, he landed in water, the scene changed in the few seconds he was opening his parachute.

According to all the clues and where he was at, Donford Wu immediately understood that he "won the lottery", in the short period of a few seconds, what happened to him was most probably an extremely rare space and time warp phenomenon.

People who have graduated from high school would know about Einstein's theory of relativity, knowing about relativity naturally allows you to know about crossing through space and time, this is an extremely mysterious phenomenon, according to theories it is split into Initiative Crossing and Passive Crossing, the so called Initiative Crossing means that the crossing through space and time was planned and has a destination, but at the moment, scientist are still unable to reach this point. The phenomenon of crossing space and time through human history were undoubtedly Passive Crossings, even the the reasons and the cause were unknown, but the scientific world has reached a consensus, the faster you go, the higher the chance is to cross through space and time.

If this happened to a normal person, after meeting this kind of situation, they would surely have a sense of loss for a long period of time, but Donford Wu didn't, as the cheetah troop's commander, meeting with any kind of situation, he must come up with a quick and accurate judgement, and what he came up with was, if he didn't hit his head and is now experiencing a serious illusion, then it must be because he accidentally crossed through space and time and went

back to some period back in time.

The pain from his left leg severed his thoughts, Donford Wu threw away the cig and checked his wounds, through his skin, he could feel that his left leg and a couple of ribs were broken.

After determining his wounds, Donford Wu went towards the west side woods with a single leg, fractured bones must be set in place as quickly as possible, the longer the delay, the more serious the swelling will become, at that point, it would be hard to determine what was the correct way to set the leg.

At the border of the forest, Donford Wu took out his dagger and cut off a few branches, and from a tree, sliced off tens of slices of tree bark as bandage, after preparing appropriately, he set his bones in the correct place, the whole process was extremely painful, a broken bone required several touches before it was set in place, the broken bones must be aligned correctly, if not, after it healed he would become a cripple.

After using branches and tree bark to set his left leg, he was already covered in sweat, almost to the point of exhaustion.

He turned his head and saw that woman not far away, after leaving the stream, the woman came back, taking away the dead fish she left behind, she hid away at a boulder twenty meters away to observe him, she stayed even after he finished setting his bones.

After another trip, the woman came back wearing a set of worn-out clothes on, her hair that covered half her face was extremely long and extremely messy, Donford Wu could only see that she was a woman with a rounded face, not ugly but not pretty. Not only that, according to her figure, her age wasn't high.

Setting the bones in place wasted away more than half an hour, the sun has already set, the curtains of net slowly but surely crept into place, Donford Wu took a look at his positioning device, his heart feeling sad and dreary, he was at the same place, but the times was not the same, his squad would never appear again/

As the curtains of night completely took over, Donford Wu silently laid down on the borders of the forest, the woman had already left who knows how long ago.

After a short period of darkness, the moon rises, basking the valley underneath it in a soft but cold light, borrowing the moonlight, Donford Wu took out whatever was on him, a lighter, a dagger, half a pack of cigs, some money, and the positioning device on his wrist, he only had this.

Putting back his stuff, Donford Wu tilted his head and went to sleep, this wasn't because his adaptability was abnormally high, but because he knew what exactly happened to him, but his heart still carried a thread of fantasy, hoping that when he woke up, his surroundings would change into a field of poppy fields, and hopping that his squad would be able to wake him up while he was deep in sleep.

After sleeping for a short period of time, a sharp pain in his leg woke him up, the sound of water flowing not far away made the last shred of hope vanish.

The positioning device had time on it, Donford Wu took a look at it, ten-thirty in the morning.

After a painful smile, Donford Wu once again took out his pack of cigs and took out a cig, dazing away as he smoked, what he was thinking about right now was not about himself, but rather his squad, after discovering that his signal vanished, his squad would surely cross the borders and search for him, the parachute they used were able to be used multiple times, they surely would be able to reach the bottom of the valley, discovering the field of poppies, but they would never find him.

This mission caused him to be missing in action, his squad would also be pulled down by him, and because they couldn't find his body, the squad couldn't really count him as a hero, his third aunt probably couldn't enjoy good treatment.....

Not knowing when, Donford Wu once again fainted, his cig was dampened, extinguishing by itself.

When he woke up again, it was already the next day's morning, his mouth felt dry, he crawled towards a tree and chopped down a branch to use as a crutch, going back to the shore, he once again sees that woman, the woman was at the same position she was at yesterday, her hand holding the same pole she held yesterday, seeing him, she stopped what she was doing and looked at him.

After a moment of hesitation, Donford Wu yelled, "Hello, may i ask, what year

is it?"

That women revealed a doubtful expression on her face, she quickly said something, the speed was quick and the pronunciation was weird.

Donford Wu couldn't understand anything she was saying, he was too lazy to try again, leaning down, he drank some water and limped towards his original position.

Through the woman's clothes, her dialect, and the surrounding mountains, he could easily see that the year he was in right now was extremely far from his year. When he discovered this, his mood became very depressed, but while depressed, he still rejoiced, the earth was formed more than four billion years ago, and humans haven't been around for more than a hundred thousand years, seeing a human after crossing through space and time was a fortune in this huge misfortune, if he saw a group of dinosaurs, then Donford Wu would probably have cried to death....

Chapter 4: Ancient Tramp

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-4/>

Chapter 4 Ancient Tramp

Donford Wu sat at the borders of the forest by the stream, the only thing he could do right now was to sit in silence. Any kind of movement would cause his broken bones to become out of place.

At around nine o'clock, the woman that was catching fish at the river went onto shore and left. She didn't catch any fish today, but only left with a few frogs.

Donford Wu stayed by the stream for three days, in correct terms, it would be waited for three days. From the first day, he knew that that the people he waited for would never come, what he waited for was not the result, but rather he waited so that he could slowly accept the cruel reality of the situation, this cruel reality was that he was completely ripped out of the world he was in, and now, was in a whole new different world, a world he had no idea about. If he wanted to survive, he must become familiar with and adapt to this new world of his.

If he wanted to live, he had to eat. Not eating for three days made Donford Wu extremely hungry, he had a wealth of experience regarding outdoor survival. Even though hunting with only one leg was not too hard, if he couldn't catch something that ran quickly, then he would catch something that ran slowly. This place had snakes, poisonous snakes, but if you lop off its head off and wash away the blood, it would be good to eat.

He didn't start a fire, but ate them raw, he wasn't familiar with the surrounding environment. Starting a fire meant smoke, smoke would expose himself. He had no way to determine what would happen to him if he exposed himself.

These few days, the woman came back every day to catch fish. But her fish catching techniques weren't anything to praise, adding those crude tools, in theory it was catching fish, but most of time, she only caught a few frogs and toads.

She didn't actively try to speak to him, Donford Wu also didn't try to interact with her. He didn't know who this woman was and he didn't know if she was part of a group or not.

Just when Donford Wu was tearing off a piece of snake flesh, a piercing yell resounded from the south side not far away, Donford Wu turned his head towards the noise, and only saw the woman running towards him with a shocked expression.

Donford Wu thought that there was some kind of wild beast chasing the woman. And just when he was searching his surroundings, that woman rushed towards him and snatched away the snake meat in his hand.

"Hey, hey, hey, what are you doing?" Donford Wu planning to snatch back that piece of snake meat.

The woman threw away the snake meat and then quickly repeated in her language, the pronunciation sounded like "Wu Xu", and also like "Wu Xiu".

Even though Donford Wu didn't understand what she was saying, but he could guess that she was trying to stop him from eating the snake meat. Because of the language barrier, he couldn't say thank you to her, but could only smile and nod in her direction.

That woman said something in a rapid session while taking out a toad that hasn't died yet from her waist, she then stuffed it in Donford Wu's hand, picked up her pole, and quickly ran away.

"This little fucker has parasites." Donford Wu couldn't laugh or cry when he looked at the toad that was still twitching its leg

His gaze sending off the woman that ran towards the forest, Donford Wu threw away the frog and picked up the snake meat. This poisonous snake really could kill a person with its bite, but the snake meat doesn't have any poison, that woman most likely didn't know about this.

Before he finished off all the snake meat, the woman came back, her hand clutching a leaf of a plant, seeing that Donford Wu was still eating the snake meat, her face exposed an angry expression, but she didn't try to snatch it away this time, she just plucked the leaf and ran off.

"Even though I can't understand what you're trying to say to me, I still want to thank you." Donford Wu said.

The woman didn't look back and quickly ran into the forest.

Donford Wu naturally didn't die from poison, because he handled it appropriately, the areas where his bones fractured didn't have any more signs of swelling, and he didn't have any sort of fever.

The following days, the woman didn't show up, this part of the valley was very secluded. Except for that woman, he didn't discover any other people.

When he saw the woman again, half a month has already passed, seeing that Donford Wu was still alive, she seemed to be very surprised, she ran over and took a look at him.

What Donford Wu cared for the most right now was what period he was in, he was using gestures to ask her, but she didn't understand what he was trying to say at all, so he could only give up for now.

The woman went back to catching fish just like her normal routine. Donford Wu sat by the shore by himself, thinking. Right now, the area he was in was at the south western frontier, most likely, even the local people living here didn't know what year it was.

It must have been the breeding period for the fish these few days, today's harvest for the women was rather large, it didn't even take half an hour before catching four or five. The way she caught fish was extremely simple, she used the sharp point of the pole to jab at the fish. More fish escaped the jab than the amount that died from the jab.

Just when she was planning to leave, a few males from down the stream ran up to block her from leaving.

The women seemed to be extremely scared of these males. She screamed while trying to escape, but her opponents were three people, and all of them were strong and young men. They were able to catch up to her very quickly. One of them held a club in his hands and smashed her into the ground, while turning her body around, he ripped off the remaining of what was clothes on her.

The women screamed an ear piercing scream while fighting back. Don't look

down on her just because she was not as burly as her opponent, with kicks and punches, biting and scratching, the man couldn't take a good hold of her. The other two males got a good laugh out of this, then went to help, planning to restrain her from kicking and scrambling.

Even before the woman was hit, Donford Wu already quietly got up and started to move. Even with injuries on him, he thought of ambushing them, but who would've thought that they could take their pants off so quickly. If he waited for a few more seconds, it would be all over. Because the situation required it, he yelled at the top of his lungs, attracting their attention.

Hearing Donford Wu's yell, the two helpers raised their clubs and rushed towards him, the other one still pressing down on the woman's body, using his legs to spread open the woman's legs.

Donford Wu couldn't move very well, but he didn't take his opponents into his eyes. If he had enough time, he might have thought of taking down his opponents, but situation was dire, he could only ask for speed, dodging one of the clubs, his dagger quickly pierced the man's heart. Taking out the dagger backhanded, he slashed diagonally towards the other one's throat, before he could even fall, Donford Wu already plugged his dagger into the last man's head.

From his position, Donford Wu could see some of the details, his eyes saw that the male was still outside the "entrance", only then did he sigh a breath of relief.

The woman was still frightened, screaming as she pushed away the body that was on top of her, she crawled up and ran towards the forest.

"Your fish." Donford Wu yelled at the women.

Hearing the noise, the women turned her head back, Donford Wu pointed at the fish that was left by the shore.

The woman took a look at the fish, then at the three bodies, at last she looked at Donford Wu, she hesitated for a long time before turning around, picking up the shredded clothing, trying to cover up.

"You don't even have anything to look at." Donford Wu took off a piece of clothing off a body, throwing it towards the woman.

While taking off the clothing, he accidentally found out that the man's chest at a curious tattoo, around the size of a palm, the tattoo took the shape of fire.

Looking at the other two, their chests' also had the same kind of tattoo, this could be the symbol of his clan, or maybe it was some kind of Sect's mark, if there was actually Sects.

While Donford Wu was looking closely at the tattoo that was on one of the bodies, the woman already threw the other two bodies into the water, the bodies didn't sink to the bottom, but rather floated down the stream.

Except for the wooden club and the bit of clothing, these people didn't carry any other things on them, the clues were extremely limited. Donford Wu still couldn't guess what period he was in.

Waiting until the woman threw away the last body into the water, Donford Wu asked, "Why did they attack you?"

The woman could guess what Donford Wu was asking, through a series of gestures, Donford Wu could also guess what she was trying to say. These three men and this woman were part of a different clan, this stream belonged to the clan of these three men, and she sneakily came here to catch fish.

"After half a day, so you were actually a thief." Donford Wu laughed.

The woman naturally didn't understand what Donford Wu was saying, through another series of gestures, she said that since they killed people, they couldn't stay here anymore and had to quickly leave.

There was no use chatting, so through a gesture, Donford Wu said that she should go first, but after she hesitated for a bit, she held the fish in one hand and pulled him into the forest in another.

"Where are you taking me?" Donford Wu asked.

The woman didn't say anything, but looked down while walking forwards.

Donford Wu didn't ask again, using tree branches as rails, he followed behind her. He actually already knew the answer, if she was living by herself, she would take him to where she hid. If she was part of a clan, then she would take him to her village.

The woman was wearing straw shoes, she rushed pretty quickly, while running, Donford Wu quietly sized her up from behind. This women was about twenty five or six years old, her round face was squarer, she was about a meter and sixty centimeters tall, very skinny, probably because of malnutrition. Not only that, this woman probably gave birth before, because her crotch was rather wide.

Even though the woman stopped from time to time to wait for him, Donford Wu still followed her with great difficulty. Anyone would find it hard to climb a mountain with only a single leg.

After climbing to the top of the mountain with great difficulty, Donford Wu was already covered in sweat. Just when he wanted to sit down and take a break, he discovered that north western hill had a patch of land that didn't have any grass on it, and a bunch of rocks were exposed. Lots of naked men were standing there digging for something.

"Is that your village?" Donford Wu pointed towards the north western side.

The woman shook her head, pointing at the north western side saying something, turning back towards Donford Wu, she urged him to get up and get going.

The positioning device didn't show any change after Donford Wu moved from his spot, it still showed his last position where he landed. Right now, it's only use was as a clock.

Twelve thirty, the woman brought Donford Wu to a village, seeing the village, Donford Wu relaxed a bit. Even though the houses and buildings were a bit broken and shabby, but was much more advanced than the shacks he thought of. With this, he knew that he wasn't in primitive times.

The woman's house was at the village's south eastern side, two six or seven year old children ran towards her, screaming "ah me" while welcoming her.

The woman gave the fish to the two children to take back to the house, she then brought Donford Wu towards the village center.

Because the men were all working in the mountain, there were mostly only women and children, Donford Wu's arrival made them feel curious, taking to the woman in a high pitched voice while taking a look at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu was also sizing them up, even though these women were also wearing rags, but they had a more complete set. Their houses were also sturdier than her house. Through this, it wasn't hard to guess that this woman's position in this village was lower than the rest.

The village took up the a lot of space, but the houses were rather far apart, the space between the houses were around ten or more meters, this might be because of they wanted to prevent snakes and bugs from getting in, the houses were also not built on the ground, but were raised a meter high by wood poles.

The woman brought Donford Wu to the village's center house. Sitting in front of the house, she talked with a middle aged man. The middle aged man didn't have any arms, at the moment, he was using his legs to use a grinder and it was currently grinding some herbs.

Seeing the grinder, Donford Wu's heart lit up. Grinders are a metal object, according to the color it should be made out of copper. Apart from the grinder, the tattoo on the man's chest also raised Donford Wu's interest. This person's tattoo was shaped like a t, looking at it carefully, it was a sword pointing down.

This armless middle aged man didn't seem to be the owner of this house, after hearing what the woman had to say, he turned to look at Donford Wu, at last, he stood up, used his feet to open the door, then went in.

The woman stared at the entrance, clearly showing that she was nervous. At one side, Donford Wu was rather quite relaxed. This women was clearly asking the chief of the village to take him in. If they accepted him, then he would stay for a period of time. If they didn't, then he would leave.....

Chapter 5 Four Thousands Year Ago

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-5/>

Chapter 5 Four Thousands Year Ago

While he was waiting, Donford Wu took a closer look at the house. The house was a large wooden house with a circular roof, the roof was draped by a grassy like plant and bones of some animals. Inside the house, the smell of herbs wafted out. It wasn't hard to guess that the owner of this house most likely had medical skills.

The two didn't have to wait for long. After a few minutes, the door opened and a woman wearing a mask walked out, following behind her was the armless middle aged man.

This woman was wearing a light grey colored long robe, her right hand holding a copper pole about the size of a thumb. On top of the copper pole was a mold of a shrunk ox head. The ox head was only a tenth of made a real ox's head was, but it was made exquisitely. The mask exceed the size of the face it was covering, the top part was painted with a red coloring to make an exaggerated expression.

When Donford Wu saw this person, he almost laughed out loud. Seeing that person, he thought of the Native Americans of the United States, only messing a few feathers inserted into the top of the head. Even though she was masked, her clothes under the robe was extremely short, half of her chest was exposed, and in between her assets was a tattoo. But it wasn't a tattoo of a small sword, but rather an abstract tiger.

"Things that should have been revealed aren't revealed, and the things that shouldn't have been exposed have all been exposed." Donford Wu thought.

Seeing that person coming out, the woman quickly knelt down, kowtowing towards the woman with the mask.

After the masked woman came out the door, her line of sight stayed on top of Donford Wu, only until she carefully sized up him did she say a few words with the woman kneeling down. The latter stood up and started talking for a long

time. Without understanding it, Donford Wu already knew it was a story of when she met him.

The story went on for five or six minutes, the masked woman didn't speak for the whole duration, her eyes didn't express too much emotion, only until the woman stopped speaking did she ask a question.

The woman turned towards Donford Wu, pointing at herself, she said "Walda Ming (Ming Wan)", and then she pointed at Donford Wu.

"Donford Wu." Donford Wu pointed at himself, after knowing her for more than half a month, did he finally get to know that woman's name.

The masked women then asked a question towards Walda Ming, the latter hearing this exposed a pained expression. After hesitating, she squatted down. Picking up a tree branch, she drew a square, on every side there was a small circle. After she finished drawing, she pointed at herself, then pointed at the circle on the western of the square.

Donford Wu naturally understood what Walda Ming was trying to say. The masked women first asked him what he was called, then asked where he was from, but this question was extremely complicated. Don't talk about a language barrier, even if they spoke the same language, he had no way to explain Einstein's theory of Relativity to these ancient people.

Walda Ming seeing that Donford Wu was frowning without speaking, she used the branch in her hand to point at the southern circle, Donford Wu shook his head. She then pointed at the eastern circle, Donford Wu still shook his head.

Following, Walda Ming pointed at the northern side and then the middle, Donford Wu still shook his head.

Seeing that she had an expression of question on her face, Donford Wu pointed at himself, then pointed towards the sky, at last, he made a gesture of falling down from the sky.

They were all originally confused, but now, they were even more confused. Looking at each other, their face expressed a sense of loss.

After a moment of silence, Walda Ming thought of something, quickly saying something to the masked women. After hearing what she had to say, doubt

appeared in her eyes. Thinking for a few seconds, she turned towards into the eastern side of the house, picking up a vase, she took out a king cobra.

At first, Donford Wu didn't understand what they wanted to do, right until Walda Ming pulled up his sleeve did he understand. He said he descended from the sky and Walda Ming saw him eat snake meat without dying, so she treated him like he was a deity. The masked women pulled out the snake because she wanted to make sure if he was a deity or not.

"No way, no way, you can't play with things like this." Donford Wu flung away Walda Ming.

The middle aged armless man seeing that he had angry expression, quickly said something to Donford Wu in a loud voice.

"Fucking bitch, you already lost your arms, the fuck you barking for." Donford Wu said with a smile even though his words did not match. They didn't understand Mandarin anyways.

He didn't understand what Donford Wu was saying, but seeing he had a smile on his face, he thought he calmed down. Snorting, he didn't say anything else.

Walda Ming seeing that Donford Wu was refusing to be bitten by the snake, said something towards him in a rush. Donford Wu kept on shaking his hand, at last, giving up, he ignored her.

The masked women placed the King Cobra back into the vase, she then coldly said something.

Walda Ming made a series of gestures towards Donford Wu, indicating him to take off his clothes.

Donford Wu knew they wanted to see if he had any tattoos, so he pulled down his camo, opened up his body armor, and lifted up his vest.

Seeing that Donford Wu didn't have a tattoo, the masked women became even more doubtful. She immediately said something, Walda Ming nodded, and then through another series of gestures, she indicated that he needs to take everything off.

"So you're treating me like livestock!" Donford Wu became irritated, putting

back on his cloths, he turned around and began walking.

The armless man quickly rushed forward, blocking his path.

“Do you want to lose your legs now too?” Donford Wu pointed at the other person’s two legs, revealing killing intent. What kind of people are the Cheetah Troops, they are China’s number one special force. What is a special force, a killing machine that is even crueler, deadlier than normal troops of the country. If they didn’t have violent and deadly nature, how could they defeat a bunch of cruel and brutal criminals?

The armless man didn’t understand what he was saying, but he heard the tone of his voice, also adding that Donford Wu was pointing at his legs, he could guess what Donford Wu was saying. Just when Donford Wu finished, the armless man’s right leg already raised up, kicking towards the left side of Donford Wu’s neck.

Right then, the masked women rushed to stop the armless man.

The armless man’s right leg was only three or four centimeters away from Donford Wu, only after being stop did he calm down and retract his leg, clearly expressing his cockiness from deep within. But when he was half finished with retracting his leg, his cocky expression vanished. This was because he discovered a weird short dagger has already arrived at his crotch.

Donford Wu retracted his dagger from the armless man’s body, going around him, he limped towards the village entrance. His self-esteem was always higher than people of his age since he was small. Whenever he went to go play at other people’s houses, if there was even a slight show of him being unwelcomed, he immediately leaves, not ever going back.

Walda Ming tried to sway the masked women, but she didn’t speak back.

Leaving the village, Donford Wu followed the path he came from. When he was walking, he regretted it a bit, it’s not like he would die from it, why couldn’t he just bear with it a little?

But his feeling of regret was quickly replaced with thinking. Walda Ming first drew a square, then drew four circles around it, this was clearly saying that the area was distributed into five clans. Walda Ming’s clan was the western clan, in Chinese tradition, the west was symbolized as gold, and the west’s divine beast

was the white tiger. The tattoo on the armless man's chest was a small sword. Showing that he was part of the Gold Clan. And the tattoo on that masked woman's chest was a tiger, this most likely represented that she was part of the Gold Clan's shaman. (uhhh tell me if there is another word for people that serve deities and stuff)

The three men he killed before could provide evidence to this deduction, the three of them all had fire shaped tattoos on them. This clearly showed that they were part of the fire clan, and in the five areas, the south side was fire. This matched their area perfectly.

If this deduction was correct, in the five clans, the Gold clan was to the west, adult males had a metal tattoo and shamans had white tiger tattoos.

The Wood clan should be to the east, adult males had a tattoo regarding wood and the shaman should have an azure dragon tattoo.

The Water clan was to the north, adult males have a tattoo regarding water and the shaman should have a black turtle tattoo.

The Fire clan was to the south, adult males have a tattoo regarding fire and the shaman should have a vermillion bird tattoo.

The Earth clan should be in the middle area. Their tattoo was temporarily unknown, but because they occupy the central area, their degree of civilization is the highest, the amount of land they have is the highest, and currently the master under the heavens. And the Gold, Wood, Water, and Fire clans are like the minorities of modern times, they are rather far away and their population isn't big.

After being sure of this point, it was rather easy to deduce what period it is, the prehistoric period surely passed already, because in the prehistoric period, people lived very far apart, and there wasn't any clear division of clans. The Shang and Zhou dynasty haven't come to be yet, because in the Shang and Zhou dynasties, the national system was already very good, there was a lot of vassal states in those periods, and not like the five separate clans like it was currently.

Now, the only thing left was the Xia dynasty. Then, Yu the Great's Nine Provinces was only in central land which was the square. Apart from the central land, the situation of other places were unknown to man, and right now, this

kind of diversion of clans most likely appeared in this period.

Being able to determine approximately what year he was in didn't make him happy, but rather made his mood worse. The Xia dynasty was four thousand years apart from modern times. Don't talk about people, even a turtle couldn't live for four thousand years.

Walking for two or three kilometers, Walda Ming caught up from behind, her face showed a depressed expression stating that the other people didn't accept her plea.

Donford Wu walked in front, she followed behind him, following him even to the top of the mountain.

"Go back, your children are waiting for you." Donford Wu turned around and gestured towards Walda Ming.

Embarrassed, Walda Ming only looked down at her feet, not saying anything.

"It was I who choose to go, it was not your clan that didn't let me stay." Donford Wu said to comfort her.

Walda Ming didn't understand him, her mood still down.

Donford Wu seeing this sighed out, the language barrier was too inconvenient.

Walda Ming seemed to have suddenly remembered something, she pulled Donford Wu's hand towards the north.

Donford Wu had a hard time walking, and there wasn't any paths in the woods, the two people advanced very slowly.

Half an hour later, Walda Ming brought him to a cave, this cave was positioned at the ridge of a mountain, its entrance pointing south. Even though it wasn't large enough to hid in, but the grass in front of the cave showed that there were very few people that came by this place.

"Thank you." Donford Wu expressed his thanks towards Walda Ming.

Giving him a place to stay, Walda Ming's mood improved a bunch, using tree branches to sweep the cave, she left him and promptly went down the mountain.

Running back and forth made Donford Wu feel exhausted, in a habit, he

reached towards his pocket, the half a pack of cigs was like a treasure to him, every time he only smoked a few breaths before extinguishing it, no matter how much he tried to save, there was only three cigs left.

Hesitating for a few seconds, he put the pack back in his pocket, then laid down to rest, now that it has come to this, there was no use in being sad , there was no use in being depressed, at least he still lived on.....

Chapter 6 Human Shaped Flame

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-6/>

Chapter 6 Human Shaped Flame

Because he walked too much during the day, the pain on his left leg increased. Donford Wu didn't have a deep sleep that day, and when it was three in the morning, he was woken up by a weird noise coming from the outside.

The noise still continued even after he woke up, the noise should be coming from a large animal, it was kind of like the noise a cow would make, but compared to a cow, it was deeper and shriller. Its position should be around the south eastern side of the valley, which was downstream from the place he used to rest at.

Donford Wu has never heard this kind of noise before. According to the noise, it seems to come from an animal that is huge in size, and the noise seems to have mixed in painful and angry noises cries. Showing that it was fighting with something.

With curiosity in his heart, Donford Wu propped himself up with a tree branch and went out of the cave. Today was the first day of the month, there was no moon in the sky, so there was no illumination outside. At the south eastern side of the valley, was a faint fire, the intensity of the flames flickered while fluttering without aim.

Fumbling to the top of the cave, what he saw was a horrifying and bizarre scene. Around ten kilometers away from his position in the valley, there was a huge snake like animal climbing up the cliff on the east side of the valley, its body was well twenty meters long, it's width wider than a meter, the shape of its body was like that of a python, but it absolutely wasn't one. This was because its head was different from a normal python, even though he couldn't see the finer details because of the distance, but he could see that its head was much wider than a python, it was more like a cow head. Not only that, from the way it moves up the cliff, this fellow most likely had claws.

Even though the huge unknown animal was horrifying, but the thing that really frightened Donford Wu was the monster's opponent, it was a human shaped red hot flame that was bouncing up and down from the valley and into the air, it would sometimes send out a round fireball to attack the cow headed monster, planning to force it back down to the valley.

Being hit by a fireball, it gave a blood-curdling scream, but it didn't turn back down to the valley, but rather increased its climbing speed. When it almost reached the top, the human shaped fire closed in on him, Donford Wu couldn't see what exactly happened. He only saw that after the fire reached the monster, the monster screamed in pain before falling down to the bottom of the valley.

Then, the human shaped flame also went down to the valley, its brightness vanishing, setting the valley back into darkness.

Only until then did Donford Wu wake up from his daze. He was sure what he just saw wasn't some kind of illusion, that cow headed snake body monster does exist, and he was sure it was defeated by that human shaped flame. Four thousand years ago at the Xia dynasty, it would be normal for huge unknown animals to exist, but what was abnormal was that human shaped flame. The flames was in the shape of a person, and it clearly had a plan on attacking that monster. If there really was a human inside the flames, how could that person withstand the flame's temperature, how could he float in mid-air? And if it wasn't a man inside, how could it attack with human tactics?

Just when he was in deep thought, the valley was filled with light yet again. The light didn't fly up, but rather followed the valley upstream, after a few minutes, it left the valley and arrived at a wide and open area. There, it waited for a short period of time before lifting off and flying towards the east.

Because the distance was shortened, Donford Wu could clearly see that there was a person inside the flames, even though he couldn't tell if it was a man or women, old or young, but he was sure there was a person inside those flames.

The incredible scene left Donford Wu unable to sleep, sitting on the mountain top, he went into a daze. He originally thought that the only difference between

the Xia dynasty and modern times was in technology and civilization, but he discovered that the problem wasn't so simple. Not only that, his confidence was greatly affected, if that person inside those flames suddenly rushed over and attacked him, it would be as easy as crushing an ant.

Five o'clock in the morning, the mountain was once again showered in a light rain. It rained frequently at this place, it could rain up to four or five times during peak hours, but the amount of rain was not a lot and the duration wasn't long either.

With the sun coming through the hazy mist, Donford Wu left the cave. Using his dagger to smooth out two Y shaped tree branches to use as crutches, he went down to the valley, following the shoreline downstream, he went to the place of battle between the monster and the human shape flame.

Because of the injury on his leg, his speed was extremely slow, only after two hours did he reach the valley downstream. From very far away, he saw the corpse of the monster, the insides of its stomach spilt out on top of shore. His guess yesterday was correct, the monster had four claws, similar to those of crocodile's. There were many burn marks on its body, there was only a small space the size of a palm that was not burnt. With its head spilt in two, the **(this was in the raws) between blood and filth scared people with just the sight.

This humongous creature's stomach was slit open, exposing the smelly intestines to the outside, mixed in with the organs was a horrible scene were corpses half melted by stomach acid was shown.

Downstream a few hundred meters was a narrow black cave entrance under the cliff, half of the entrance was covered by water. With the messy scratch marks, it was easy to see that the monster use to live here.

Donford Wu didn't stay there for long. While going back, he felt fear slowly creep into his heart, the human shaped flame from last night was most likely a shaman from the Fire clan, coming here to find the murderer of his three clan's men. If it wasn't for this monster swallowing the corpses as a shield and scapegoat, they would most likely find the real murderer, him.

Going back upstream to the flat area, an anxious Walda Ming ran towards him,

saying something to him in a worried voice.

Donford Wu smiled at her, Walda Ming most likely discovered that he wasn't in the cave, so she ran here to come find him.

With the language barrier, the two people were unable to chat anymore. Walda Ming supported Donford Wu back to the cave, giving him a small pot, Donford Wu reached out and grabbed it, finding half a pot of congee inside.

"I ate already, bring it back to your children to eat."

Donford Wu placed the pot down.

Walda Ming confused once again tried giving it to him again. Donford Wu carefully put it down on the ground and pointed at his lips.

"I ate."

Walda Ming suspiciously stared at Donford Wu, Donford Wu smiled back at her.

Walda Ming didn't try again, carrying the pot she walked out the cave, before leaving, with a serious expression she pointed at Donford Wu's leg, then pointed at the cave, meaning his leg was injured, don't walk around

Donford Wu replied with a small smile, using his gaze to send Walda Ming out. He has never seen Walda Ming's husband, her house in the village was the most broken, she also went to the stream to catch food under danger, this clearly showed that something happened to her husband. Saying it simpler, Walda Ming was most likely a widow.

Sending out Walda Ming, Donford Wu once again thought of yesterday. He wasn't sure it was a shaman of the fire clan that borrowed the power of flame to fly, but he was sure it must be an expert in Qi, people trained in Qi in modern times, even though they couldn't borrow flames to fly, but they could use hard Qi to kill an ox, it was also possible to use light steps to fly across roof tops.

He was a soldier, soldiers believed in materialistic things, but this didn't affect him on the existent of Qi. Special troops also had to practice hard Qi techniques, if he didn't believe in Qi then why the fuck would he practice it.

Sitting down for a while, Donford Wu once again left the cave, he couldn't

move quickly, so he the only thing he could hunt were snakes. At the west side of the mountain ridge, there was a small stream in between the cave and village. Going there to take a drink, he cleaned out the snake meat and went back to the cave. Compared to the shore, he liked this place more, even though he had to move rather far to drink water, but here he could avoid the rain, and the because the terrain was a higher, it was also rather cool, not attracting that many flies.

He ate grilled snake meat this time, the people in the village already knew of his existence, there was no reason to hide.

Snake meat had that fishy taste to it, eating too much would make people irritated. As the old saying goes, rest for a hundred days after taking a beating. It was bad for the leg injury not to rest for three months, Donford Wu couldn't keep eating this stuff for that long

He could always use his dagger as a flying knife, but the dagger couldn't be flown too far, and in the worst case it didn't kill the animal, it might take away the knife running away. Thinking carefully, Donford Wu decided to make a bow.

Making a bow wasn't too much of a difficulty to him, bamboo was plenty where he was. The curve of the bow, the length of the arrows, the placing of feathers, this was all in the training material of the special troops, finding most of the materials, he remembered that there weren't any thing to use as a bow string. He first thought of using the monster's muscles. Even though using animal muscle to make bow strings was a long and ancient practice, but the process of making it was too complicated, and it also needed to be drenched in oil for a long time before he could begin the process.

Doing nothing for a while, Donford Wu's brain had a sudden spark of inspiration. He took off his body armor. The body armour's bullet proof layer was made with layers of special fibers, it had extreme toughness and elasticity, but because it was interwoven, he had no way to only take off one layer, so he could only use his dagger to slowly cut off a single strand.

It could be considered that he made best use of the material, even though the body armor could withstand bullets, but against sharp and piercing objects, it didn't have much use. Saying it simply, the body armor couldn't withstand

pierces, so it didn't have much use.

Cutting off the fiber, it didn't seem different from normal silk on the outside, and cutting off a bit didn't destroy the main body of the body armor, putting back on the body armor. Starting a fire, Donford Wu began making a bow and arrows.

Working on it till midnight, the bow and arrows was finished, because he couldn't stand all too well, he could only shoot it up to a hundred meters, and its effective range was only forty or fifty meters, minus the target knowing about it.

In the afternoon of that day, Walda Ming came by, seeing the situation inside the cave surprised her. Inside and outside the cave was a mess of bird feathers, Donford Wu was currently outside cave grinding a kind of bird's bone.

Seeing that Walda Ming came by, he pointed at the waterfowl outside the cave, this was species of large birds that lived by the stream and the reason why he caught them was because he needed their bones to make arrows. Bird bones were extremely hard, the holes inside the bones allowed blood to flow out at quick speeds, in a world without metal arrow heads, he could only use this to replace them.

Seeing the waterfowl made Walda Ming extremely happy, putting down a pot, she picked up the arrows outside the cave to take a closer look..

Donford Wu momentarily stopped working and titled his head to look at Walda Ming, according to the way she moved, she wasn't unfamiliar to arrows, but for some reason, the people living here hunted very rarely.

The men inside the village went to the mountain on the northern side every day to excavate. If he wasn't wrong, then that place should be a small scale open-air copper mine, mining was the job of the men of the village.

With the main force of labor mining, where did the village's source of food come from, relying on women surely wasn't the answer. The most possible answer was that the village wasn't the only one. It was only a single village of many in the Gold clan, they mined for the Gold clan and the Gold clan routinely gave them food and rations.

But he wasn't sure if this was true or not, because of the language barrier, he

had no way to ask further to make sure.

“Come here, come here.”

Donford Wu waved at Walda Ming

Walda Ming placed the arrows back down, turning around she went over.

Donford Wu picked up a stone on the ground and drew a square and four circles, then pointed at Walda Ming saying, “Walda Ming”. Then, pointing back at himself, “Donford Wu”. At last, pointing at the stone in his hand.

“Xi Ya.”

Walda Ming said.

Donford frowned, then placing the stone on the southern small circle.

Walda Ming didn’t understand what Donford Wu was trying to say, because of the language barrier, they could only use gestures, making the results make them look like two idiots.

Helpless, Donford Wu once again picked up another rock, Walda Ming once again said,

“Xi Ya.”

Donford Wu picked up the stone he placed down on the southern circle, copying her pronunciation but with an emphasized questioning manner, “Xi Ya?”

This time Walda Ming understood, she picked up a rock and placed it on the eastern side, the northern side and the central side,

“Xi Ya, Xi Ya, Xi Ya.”

Finishing, she picked up a tree branch, placing it down on the five positions one at a time.

“Me Li, Me Li, Me Li, Me Li, Me Li.”.

Donford Wu relaxed after seeing this, the most urgent thing right now was to learn the Xia dynasty’s language, but he wasn’t sure the language Walda Ming was using was used in the other four clans, only after making sure of this did he start to learn. Like a foreigner going to China, if they wanted to learn Chinese they must learn Pu Tong Hua, if they painfully learnt different dialect, then

discovered that they learnt the dialect of only a few people, then he would be fucked.

After making sure the language was used all around, Donford Wu began learning, Walda Ming tried her best to teach him, every day at noon, she would go back to the village, it was possible that they were giving out food at that time, and in the afternoon she had nothing to do. Donford Wu was extremely skilled in hunting, everyday Walda Ming would take some of it back home. So now, she didn't have to go out to find more food, and she had more time to teach Donford Wu the language.

Normal people around the world always think that the special troops were tall, mighty and muscular hunks of meat. But truthfully, this kind of thinking was wrong, a special soldier must learn how to shoot, gamble, assassinate, make bombs, take pictures, take pictures, swim, ski, mountain climb, parachute, be on alert, reconnaissance, rescue, etc. battle techniques, and they also need to be able to treat infections and have a vast knowledge of plants and animals. Learning all these things is not a simple matter, that's why the special troops must first think about is not appearance and build, but rather their IQ, an idiot has no way to be able to learn all these things.

Donford Wu is extremely smart, while learning you can't just forcefully memorize, but rather try your best to find the similarities and differences between the Xia dynasty language and the modern language. After four thousand years, the change in language surely was huge. But at last, there was a few similarities, after finding the pattern, Donford Wu was able to quickly learn the language. After a month, he could already have simple talks with Walda Ming.....

Chapter 7 Out of Place Monster

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-7/>

Chapter 7 Out of Place Monster

To be able to speak simply, means he could have simple conversations. Donford Wu first confirmed Walda Ming's identity. Walda Ming really was a widow. A few years ago, while her husband was transporting ores, he was bitten to death by a wild beast. At this time, two things might happen to the widow, if she didn't bear a child, then she will be buried with her husband, but if she bore a child for that husband, then she can live on, and the person in charge of the village will decide whether she remarries or keeps on being a widow.

Determining Walda Ming's situation, he started to ask about the situation of the village. Letting him know that the Xia dynasty wasn't as undeveloped as he thought it was, but had a strict ranking system. The Xia dynasty's Earth clan was the largest, they lived in the best environment in the middle. The leader of the Earth clan is called the "Emperor", the four clans, Gold, Wood, Water, and Fire clan all serve under the Earth clan, they had the nature of vassal states, and the leaders of the four clans were called "kings".

Walda Ming hasn't traveled far before, so she didn't know the details of the central Earth clan and the other three clans. She only knew that all members of the Gold clan have the surname Ming, the Gold clan is split into six tribes, each tribe having an unequal amount of villages. All villages have different amount of people, some have more than a thousand, and some only have tens of people.

Every village has a shaman to lead and manage the village. The status of the shaman was like that of a village chief in modern times, but shamans must do much more then what a village chief has to do. While being similar to a village chief, they are also the security head and a barefoot doctor. The shaman has the last say in everything that happens in the village.

Shamans are also split into rankings, the shamans of a village are called shamans, while the shaman of the tribe also does the same thing as a shaman, but they are much more powerful than the shamans in the village, they are

called Sages. And at last, there is the most powerful shaman, they are able to speak with the deities of the world, borrowing the power of deities, they are called Celestial Masters.

As long as there different levels in society, information can be transferred through each and every single level. That's why even if Walda Ming doesn't know the specific situation of the other clans, but she has heard stories of them. Her impression of the five clans was that the Earth clan was the most powerful, the Wood clan was rather peaceful, the Water clan the most mysterious, the Fire clan the most violent, and the Gold clan the weakest of all five, always being bullied.

When she was asked why the Gold clan was the weakest, Walda Ming's reply was that she wasn't sure and didn't know.

Donford Wu was already satisfied that he could know this much, Walda Ming was but just a normal member of the Gold clan, and a women at that too, so she wouldn't be too clear on the details of the outside world.

With his injuries becoming better, the amount of prey that Donford Wu hunted became more and more. Even though he hunted more and more, but he himself ate very little, most of it was sent to Walda Ming. His main goal was to trade more time for Walda Ming to teach him the language. The women of the village all had to go to the mines to send the men food, Walda Ming wasn't an exception, but after she brought back so much meat, she turned into an exception.

The leisurely Donford Wu also tried to help restore Walda Ming's house, but after trying, he gave up. At that day and age, they didn't have nails, the house had a Mortise and Tenon structure, and he himself didn't know much about construction.

The people of the village all knew the prey that Walda Ming brought back was given to her by him, that's why they didn't treat him with disgust, but rather when they see him, they slightly smile and nod at him. But without the permission of the shaman, no one was allowed to speak with him.

With his leg injury healed about seventy or eighty percent, and his proficiency in the language growing more and more as he spoke it, Donford Wu got more

and more curious of the outside world. Trying his best to acquire more information, he tried going to the mines. Planning on building a relationship with the men, he found out the women was much nicer to him, the men treated him extremely coldly, almost to point of treating him as the enemy. Not understanding this, he went to Walda Ming to find out the reason, Walda Ming's reply made him laugh out a stomach ache.

"They're afraid you'll seduce their wives."

With Walda Ming's answer, Donford Wu didn't go back to village ever again.

"Did something happen to you recently?"

Donfrod Wu asked Walda Ming that was bringing food. Lately, Walda Ming always had a worried expression on her face.

"Nothing."

Walda Ming shook her head.

"We're friends, you don't have to hide anything from me."

Donford Wu stated, his pronunciation was still a little off, but Walda Ming could still get the gist of it.

"Are you leaving?"

Walda Ming handed over a small pot over to Donford Wu.

"Leave where?"

Donford Wu received the small pot, using a small stick, he sent a piece of rabbit meat next to his mouth.

"Home."

Walda Ming said.

Donford Wu was dumb struck, after a moment, he quickly took a bite of the meat.

"I don't have a home."

"Everyone has a home except for slaves."

Walda Ming said in a suspicious tone.

“I’m not a slave, but it’s just that my home is very, very far away.”

Donford Wu said to her.

“How far?”

Walda Ming continued.

“So far that I will never be able to go back.”

Donford Wu placed down the meat, picking up his dagger, he touched it aimlessly.

“Do you have a wife?”

Walda Ming continued to ask about his background.

“I do.”

Donford Wu wasn’t stupid, he knew the goal behind asking this question.”

“Then are you willing to have another?”

Donford Wu froze, he forgot that right now was the Xia dynasty, a man could marry multiple women, so his lie was no use at all.

“I bore two children.”

Walda Ming said in a proud tone.

Donford Wu stifled a laugh, not directly answering the question, he didn’t know if this was the general thinking of the Xia dynasty, or was it just the thinking of the far away Gold clan. To women, being able to bare children was an extremely good quality to be proud of.

“Cooking, repairing shoes, sewing, I can do all of it.”

Walda Ming said in a direct manner.

“I have always treated you as a friend.”

Donford Wu was ignorant. He didn’t dislike Walda Ming, but he never thought of marrying her as a wife.

After Donford Wu finished saying that, Walda Ming exposed a happy expression on her face, Donford Wu yelled at himself in secret. He still wasn’t

very precise in his wording, in the Xia dynasty's language, saying friend, was very much saying you liked that person.

"I have something very important to do, so I can't stay here."

Donford Wu hurriedly used his brain.

"I have kids, so I can't go with you."

Walda Ming was very disappointed, with a long sigh, she sat on top of a boulder with a glum expression.

Donford Wu wasn't hungry anymore and didn't eat anymore rabbit meat, after ten minutes, Walda Ming took back the pot and went home.

Using his gaze to send Walda Ming off, he went back into his cave to continue to fix his quiver. At first, he used bamboo as a quiver, but it always shook whenever he placed it on his back, so he exchanged it with a flat shaped wooden quiver.

Three in the afternoon, Donford Wu was taking a nap in the cave. Suddenly, he heard footsteps from outside the cave, peeking out, he saw Walda Ming walking up the mountain ridge.

Because he just refused Walda Ming's confession in the morning, Donford Wu still felt a bit embarrassed and sorry, picking up his dagger and quiver, he pretended to be busy.

Walda Ming walked up to the entrance of the cave and stopped.

"It's hot outside, it's cooler in here.'

Donford Wu tilted his head towards Walda Ming.

Walda Ming didn't move.

"Come in."

Donford Wu said.

Hesitating for a bit, she sat down in a corner of the cave.

Putting down his dagger and quiver, he picked up a water pot and walked over to give it to her.

With her hands cupping the pot, and her body to the side, she turned her body

in an exposed manner towards Donford Wu.

With her gaze, Donford Wu could vaguely guess what she wanted to do, in a hurry, Donford Wu quickly turned around and sat back at his original position. What he felt towards Walda Ming was pity and appreciation, and nothing else. This didn't mean he disliked her, but he simply did not feel anything towards her.

Walda Ming was still staring at him, her eyes burning with passion, Donford Wu quickly picked up his dagger and started fixing the quiver again. With his heart in a mess, he accidentally cut his left hand's index finger.

Seeing that he injured his own finger, Walda Ming hurriedly climber over, placing the dagger in his hand and the quiver to the side, she held his index finger, sticking out her tongue to lick the blood on the surface of Donford Wu's skin.

With only this one move, Donford Wu became flushed till his ears turned red, but he was only flushed in the back of his head, after licking away the blood, she placed his index finger into her mouth and sucked, while sucking, she used her tongue to slide around the wound on his finger.

These days, his meals only consisted of meats, snake meat, rabbit meat, and bird meat, all these meats made him extremely slow and irritated. With Walda Ming's action, Donford Wu had an immediate reaction, quickly pulling out his finger, he went to grab a different water pot.

Walda Ming sat at her original position while she started to loosen the strings on her clothes. She originally didn't have much on, even before Donford Wu could give a reaction, the top of her body was already exposed.

Donford Wu choked on a mouthful of water, placing the water pot back down, he waved his hand,

"Waaaiiiittt, wait, wait wait wait, let's talk about this."

But Walda Ming didn't wait, she increased her speed, standing up, she slid out of the dress like underwear.

Donford Wu always treated Walda Ming like a friend, only until today did he know that Walda Ming had interest in him, before this, she barely exposed any feelings. Once the paper window that was in between a man and women was

broken, they could never become friends, if they weren't lovers, then they would be strangers.

Donford Wu didn't want to have to end his friendly relationship with Walda Ming, nor did he want to do Walda Ming, he wanted a point of balance between the two. But after seeing Walda Ming take off her undergarments, the two flowery white circles left his heart pumping, two ideas started to float in his head and fight,

"Fuck this shit, I'll fuck then find something out later."

"We can't do that, if we fucked her, how would we take care of her and her family."

In modern times, there were a number of women that confessed to him, some of them were rather direct, but none has ever actively took off their pants, and using an intense glare to seduce and charm him. No normal people could withstand this amount of seduction, but he could just barely do that, at least for the moment, but after a few seconds, he started to think, why should I withstand this?

Now that Walda Ming's clothes were all gone, she lied down on the ground, gesturing towards Donford Wu in a beckoning fashion.

"The caves too hot, I'm going to go outside to cool down."

Donford Wu forcefully suppressed his lewd thinking, rushing out of the cave.

Before he completely left the cave, Donford Wu suddenly felt his body covered in cold sweat, the hairs on his body standing up, what he saw was the most impossible scene, Walda Ming was currently walking towards the cave while holding a pot not far away.

Just when he was incomparably frightened, he discovered that his left hand was being pulled, slowly turning his head, he saw Walda Ming reaching out, trying to pull him back into the cave.

Just then, his training and hardness came right back into him, Donford Wu restored his calmness in a flash. The Walda Ming in the cave was most likely fake, because her performance today was absurdly lewd, the teasing and seducing was just too direct.

Just then, the Walda Ming outside saw him, she quickly rushed towards the cave.

Even though he was still suspicious that the Walda Ming inside the cave was fake, he still wasn't a hundred percent sure, in a sudden flash of inspiration, he thought of something, tilting his head at taking a glance, he quickly turned around and hugged the woman in the cave, then grabbed the dagger and slit her throat.....

Chapter 8 Fox Spirit

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-8/>

Chapter 8 Fox Spirit

Afterwards, Donford Wu immediately slid back, he was sure on what was coming next.

With her jugular slit, fresh blood came squirting out, after half a second of shock, the woman used her hands to cover her neck, rushing out the cave in a mess.

Donford Wu didn't block her, with her jugular slit open, there was no question about her death. He didn't take lightly to being played around with.

At that time, Walda Ming was just a few steps away from the cave, seeing a woman with not a single scrap of clothing and a body covered with blood running out of the cave, she was frightened till her face turned white. And when she saw the face of the woman, Walda Ming's leg's lost strength and she fell to the ground.

After rushing out of the cave with her throat slit, the women crashed and tripped, running towards the east, but she losted a lot of blood, not running too far away, she collapsed, then began to spasm.

Donford Wu quickly went over to Walda Ming to help her up. Walda Ming took a look at Donford Wu with fright, without knowing it, she wanted to run away.

"That woman wanted to harm me."

Donford Wu helped Walda Ming up.

"It is not human."

Walda Ming replied.

Donford Wu thought he heard incorrectly, looking doubtfully at Walda Ming.

Walda Ming stretched out her hand and pointed,

"Look."

Donford Wu turned his head around to look, he was once again surprised, with just a blink of an eye, the woman already vanished, in its place was a grey furred fox splattered in blood. At this moment, it still hasn't died yet, its hind legs still twitching.

"You really are capable, to be able to kill it off."

Walda Ming said happily.

"You saw it before?

Donford Wu asked suspiciously, Walda Ming was originally extremely scared, but now that she saw the woman turn into a fox, she wasn't scared, this showed that she wasn't unfamiliar with the fox.

"It always transforms into a woman to seduce the men of the village, and it also steals our food."

Walda Ming raised the small pot to Donford Wu.

"You didn't eat much at lunch, I made some congee for you."

Donford Wu absently took the pot, even though he heard the legends of foxes turning into people, but he never treated them seriously. Foxes and humans were two completely different organisms, how can a canidae species turn into that of a primate species? But there was a live example right in front of him, he couldn't not believe it even if he didn't want to. First, what he saw and touched all were real, it absolutely wasn't an illusion. That grey furred fox really did transform into a woman.

"Aren't you scared?"

Donford Wu held the pot while following Walda Ming to the fox.

"It's already dead, what's there to be scared of?"

Walda Ming kicked at the grey furred fox.

"It transformed into you."

Donford Wu emphasized.

"It loves transforming into me the most."

Walda Ming casually spoke out.

“Can it transform into other people?”

The more Donford found out about the fox, the more surprised he became.

“It can.”

Walda Ming lifted the fox by its tail, this fox was much larger than a normal one. A normal fox weighs about five or ten kilos, but this one could weigh about twenty or twenty five kilos, it was larger than a normal fox by two times.

“It’s a fox, how can a fox become a human?”

Donford Wu still couldn’t accept this illogical and strange phenomenon.

“If it lives long enough it can.”

Walda Ming pointed a wound the size of a coin on its left leg.

“Yup, it is it.”

Donford Wu helplessly sighed out. He really wanted to know how a fox could become a human, it was clear that Walda Ming couldn’t answer this question.

“How did you know it was fake?”

Walda Ming asked.

“It wasn’t as good looking as you.”

Donford Wu laughed, actually, the reason he was sure that the woman in the cave wasn’t Walda Ming, was because back then, when the Fire clansmen wanted to sexually harass Walda Ming back at the river, he tripped and saw that the Fire clansman was still at the “entrance”, he naturally saw the “entrance”. Before he made his move, he took a look at it, and it wasn’t the same.

Hearing Donford Wu compliment her, Walda Ming was extremely happy, holding the fox, she walked towards the south.

“Go eat, I’ll be back.”

“You can’t eat that kind of thing, throw it away.”

Donford Wu frowned.

“I want to bring it back to let them take a look, you helped us a lot this time.”

Walda Ming took the fox back to the village and helped him take credit for it.

Just experiencing an extremely strange situation, how could Donford Wu have the stomach for food? Putting down the pot, he quickly went back to the cave. There, he only that the clothes the fox took off already transformed into a few handfuls of grey fox fur.

Picking up the few handfuls of fox fur, slight confusion swirled inside Donford Wu's brain. First, no matter what, how could a fox turn fur into cloths? Then talking about weight, the fox wouldn't weigh more than twenty five kg, how could it transform into a person that weighs 90 something kg. The weight before and after must stay the same, the fox increasing weight after turning into a human clearly violated the law of conservation of matter.

The law of conservation of matter was the basic law of the natural world. It is a very mature and accurate theory, no matter what it is, no matter if it is a human or an animal, they must all follow this law, how can this fox be an exception?

Painfully pondering for half an hour, Donford Wu had a sudden spark of inspiration, the premise of the law of conservation of matter was that before and after the transformation happened, it was completely separated from the environment. When the fox transformed into a human, it wasn't in a sealed off area. This means that when it transform, it absorbs something from the world, thus increasing its weight. After it dies, these substances return back into the world, thus restoring it to its original weight.

To be able to be absorbed by a fox and not be seen or felt, was "Qi" that absolutely existed. This means that when transforming, it absorbed the world's "Qi", the "Qi" being the basic reason why it can change its weight and appearance.

As to why it was only slight confusion and not confusion before, was because he could only think to this point, as to how the fox absorbed "Qi", he didn't want to think about that. Or how it used "Qi" to change fur into clothes, he didn't want to understand it.

The Donford Wu that really didn't want to think about it anymore was not because he didn't want to understand it. He originally lived in the twenty first century, and that time's scientific knowledge could only explain this situation up to here. Maybe after science was more advanced, could it completely explain

what was going on. He firmly believed that when science has been developed to the extreme limit, everything that was just an idea, could be explained realistically. He also hated that science had only developed to this point, so he could only forcefully explain this mysterious phenomenon.

Exhausting his brain, he felt hungry, holding the pot, he started to drink the congee, he liked congee, after eating it, he would be able to sleep without feeling irritated.

Nearing the evening, Donford Wu placed the quiver on his back just like he always did before, picking up his long bow, he went out to hunt. Right now, it was almost summer, the animals were starting to get pregnant and multiply. He normally didn't hunt female animals, because he was afraid of harming a pregnant one.

This night, he choose to go south, he used to hunt the animals near the village, but now it was clear that the prey there has decreased.

The sun went down at around five in this area, right until eight did it truly turn dark. These three hours was the golden time for hunting, but his luck tonight wasn't too good, going south for a couple of kilometers, he only hunted a large pheasant. Seeing that the sky was turning black, he turned around to go back.

To get lucky on his way back home, he didn't use the same path he used to get there, taking a detour to the west. When he was walking by a Camphor forest, he heard a heavy breathing sound coming from inside. The breathing sound was quick and heavy, clearly showing that it was a large animal.

Even though he could walk fine, but he couldn't carry something too heavy. A prey that was too big was too hard to bring back.

Just when he wanted to go around and leave this place, he heard a "Ne~Ne~" sound coming from the forest, the sound was very childish, very similar to the nasal noises a child makes, it should be some kind of animal's child crying.

Feeling curiosity, Donford Wu climbed up on a large tree by his side. With his high vantage point, he could see far and a bird's eye view of the forest. He could only see a very large animal sitting under a Camphor tree, it had a white belly, black claws, a white head and two black circles on its eyes.

“What kind of thing is this?”

Even though the rays of light were already very dim, but he could determine that the animal sitting under the tree was most probably a panda from its appearance. The reason why he said it was most probably, was because this panda was much larger than his impression of pandas.

The panda was doing a series of strange actions, its two claws was slowly digging out dirt from its two sides. Not far away, a little guy about the size of a washbasin was calling out, trying to get close to it. But strangely, when the little guy crawled close to it, the panda would push it away.

According to the strange actions of the panda, Donford Wu could determine that this panda was very weak right now. But because of the distance, he had no way to determine if it was because of a wound or was it because it was sick.

Donford Wu slid down the try, quickly walking into the Camphor forest, he was now only ten meters away from the panda, but the panda didn't get up and attack him.

The panda's belly had blood stains, but the stains were only sticking on its fur, the stomach didn't have any wounds.

“Is the wound on its back?”

Donford Wu circled around towards the north, walking a few steps, his feet sent a smooth and creamy feeling back to him.

Inside a forest, this was the most horrible feeling, walking on a smooth and creamy thing meant that he stepped on a snake seventy or eighty percent of time.

Feeling this, Donford Wu jumped away, at the same time, he turned his head to take a look, and seeing it, he really did step onto a snake. The snake was probably poisonous, it was a bright red all around and had a five inch horn growing from its head. But the snake was already dead, half of its body was long gone.

Discovering the snake's corpse, Donford Wu didn't continue to circle around to the back side of the panda, this was because it was clear that the panda was bitten by the poisonous snake.

At this time, the panda already stopped digging, its heavy breathing slowly vanishing.

The little guy crawled towards its side, this time the panda didn't push it away.

Donford Wu sighed, swatting away bugs and flies from his face, it was almost dark, he had to get back as quickly as possible.

But for no reason at all, his brain started to surface the picture of the panda pushing away the little panda, it was about to die, why did it have to push the child away?

Walking for tens of meters, he suddenly remembered the reason, the little guy probably hasn't stopped drinking from the milk, the panda was afraid the child would drink its milk and be poisoned to death.

Thinking to this point, Donford Wu quickly turned around and ran back, picking up the little guy that was already hugging the mother panda.

The little guy didn't appreciate this, he scream and struggled, it even wanted to bite him.

Donford Wu took off his upper cloths, using it to wrap it, he left a small pocket to let it breath. Picking it up, he left the Camphor forest.

“Ne~Ne~Ne~Sniff~Sniff~Sniff~Wah~Wah~Wah~”

The little guy continued to cry with all its might while on the road.

Donford Wu became irritated from all the noise, he slapped its butt.

“Stop crying, you're stronger than me, and at least you know how your mother looked like....”

Chapter 9 Forced to Leave

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-9/>

Chapter 9 Forced to Leave

Being hit, the little guy cried even louder, struggled even harder, with a ripping sound, he clawed open Donford Wu's camo.

"I only have this one piece of clothing."

Just as Donford Wu said this, another ripping sound came out.

Before he could even react, the little guy already fell out of a hole in the clothing.

Heartbroken, Donford Wu looked at the large hole in his camo. This wasn't just simple cloths to him, but rather, a memory of his squad, of modern times.

"Pang"

"Wah"

Hearing the sound, he turned his head around, He saw the little guy crash into a big tree while trying to escape. Crashing into it hard, it was rolling on the ground.

Sighing, Donford Wu took off his body armour, putting it on the little guy, he once again used his camo to carry it back. It was too small now, it wouldn't be able to survive in the wild, letting it run free was the same as letting it die.

The little guy still wasn't a good panda, it was still struggling inside the body armour.

"If you can rip it, then rip it."

Donford Wu quickened his pace, he saw a faint light coming from atop the north side mountain, this meant that Walda Ming was waiting there.

Climbing to the waist of the mountain, Donford Wu felt that something was wrong, lifting up the cloth bag, a furry hind leg stuck out of it.

Discovering this abnormality, he felt extremely shocked. Even though the body

armour couldn't defend against piercing attacks, it was still pretty hard to pierce. When he was slicing off a strand for the bow string, it took him more than an hour. But this little panda was at most wrapped in the clothing for twenty minutes.

Arriving at the mountaintop, Walda Ming walked over to welcome him. Receiving the bow and arrows, plus the large pheasant from his hand, she asked.

"What's inside that bag?"

"A panda, small one."

After Donford Wu finished speaking, Walda Ming had a suspicious look on her face. Helplessly shaking his head, Donford Wu could understand the Xia dynasty's language spoken by Walda Ming into modern terms, but the modern terms he spoke couldn't be understood by Walda Ming.

After he shook his head, he lifted the bag and walked towards the cave.

Borrowing the light from the campfire, Wlda Ming could clearly see the back of the head that was exposed to the outside. Her expression immediately changed drastically.

"Quick, release it."

"Why?"

Donford Wu asked in a doubtful voice.

"Pixius are fierce and wild beasts, since you took its kid, its mother will come and find you."

Walda Ming said in a hurried manner.

"Look carefully, it's a panda."

Donford Wu untied the bag, he lifted the little guy up by the back of his neck.

"It's a Pixiu, look at the ears and eyes."

Walda Ming stated in a sure tone.

"Your Pixius look like this?"

Donford Wu asked casually.

Seeing that Donford Wu didn't believe her, Walda Ming became more and more worried.

"It IS a Pixiu, even tigers and leopards are afraid of them, you better let it go, Its mother would be able to find this place sooner or later."

"Its mother is dead."

Donford Wu held the sniffing little guy. He thought of where he should place him. String definitely wouldn't be able to hold him.

"You killed it?"

Doubt filled Walda Ming's eyes, showing that she didn't believe Donford Wu.

"Nope, it was killed by a horned red snake."

Donford Wu placed the little guy back into the cloths bag. He lifted it towards Walda Ming.

"Hold it for me."

"What are you going to do?"

Walda Ming was holding the cloths bag with a frightened and worried look.

"Take care of ift for a few days."

Donford Wu lifted a boulder and walked towards the cave. he wanted to make a rock encirclement in the cave to keep the panda in.

"Paxius eat people, you can't take care of it.

Walda Ming shouted.

"No problem, I'll let it go after a few days."

Donford Wu casually replied.

The blood stains in the cave (by the fox) were already wiped clean by Wlada Ming. Donford Wu made a quarter circle of boulders that was half a person tall at the north western corner of the cave. Next he placed the panda inside.

"It's already so big, it can find food for itself, let it go."

"Walda Ming continued to try to sway him.

“No.”

Donford Wu was irritated, he emphasised his tone.

Seeing Donford Wu standing firm, Walda Ming stopped trying to sway him. But a worried expression still lingered on her face.

“You guys call them Pixius?”

Donford Wu checked his body armour. The strong and firm body armour had a couple of openings ripped open by the little fucker. A normal panda absolutely wouldn’t be able to do this, that’s why he started to think whether the little fucker was a panda, or did it just look like one.

“Yup, i didn’t see incorrectly, it is a Pixu.”

Walda Ming turned around and left the cave.

“What does it like to eat?”

Donford Wu asked again. In modern times, Pixius were said to be the child of dragons. That and pandas were two completely different things.

“Meat.”

Walda Ming added branches to the camp fire.

“Does it eat bamboo?”

Donford Wu asked again.

“Only when it can’t find meat.”

Walda Ming stated.

Donford Wu didn’t ask anything else. Pandas came from carnivores. Right until modern times, they would still occasionally eat a bit of meat. As long as the little guy ate bamboo, it was a panda without question. Walda Ming said it was a Pixiu. This meaning that modern people had an incorrect understanding. In ancient times, they were pandas, not some kind of child of dragons.

“It’s already so late, why did you come over?”

Donford Wu asked. Normally, Walda Ming would only come once every day, and it was already the third time she came over today.

Walda Ming didn't say anything.

"Did something happen?"

Donford Wu asked.

"I harmed you, I shouldn't have brought the fox back."

Walda Ming said in a dreary tone.

DOxford Wu slowly walked out.

"What happened?"

"When i brought the dead fox back to the village, everyone admired you for killing the fox, but the shaman wasn't happy. She told me to tell you, after you are all well and good, you would need to leave."

Walda Ming said.

"Why wasn't she happy?"

Donford Wu asked.

While shaking her head, Walda Ming said.

"That fox was very strong, even the shaman couldn't defeat it. But you, you were able to kill it. That's why the shaman is suspicious of your identity. She's afraid you'll bring trouble to the village.

"That's human nature, I don't blame her. You can tell her that after half a month, I'll definitely leave for sure .

"It's all my fault, I shouldn't have brought it back."

Walda Ming blamed herself.

"It has nothing to do with you. It's my fault for not being able to explain my identity clearly. It's perfectly normal for her to be suspicious of me.

Donford Wu casually said.

Walda Ming lowered her head, not speaking. After a moment passed, she untied a small pouch from her waist and lifted it towards Donford Wu.

"What's this?"

Donford Wu asked.

“The dan of the fox.”

Walda Ming replied.

Donford Wu took the pouch. He took out what was inside. It was a red pearl, around the size of a quail egg, it had a faint fragrance to it.

“So these things really exist. Which part of the body did it come from?”

Donford Wu sized up the pearl in his hand. People who have seen horror movies were familiar with this thing, but very few people saw them with their own eyes.

“Some are in the brain, some are in the stomach. I found this one in the stomach.”

Walda Ming stated.

Donford Wu placed the pearl back into the pouch.

“How did you know it had something like this in its stomach??”

“All wild beasts that have lived long enough have one. But very few are red, most are white. Since this one is red, it costs a lot of money.”

Walda Ming didn’t pronounce money. That was because there wasn’t anything like money at this period, what she said was “Yao yun wu me”, which meant it could be exchanged for a lot of things.”

“What use does it have? Why is a red one more costly than a white one?”

Donford Wu asked curiously.

“I think that the Earth clan are able to use them to heal people. There are a lot less red ones than white ones, white ones can only be traded for a small pot of salt, while the red ones can be traded for three sheep.”

Walda Ming said.

“I’ll give it to you.”

Donford Wu lifted the pouch towards Walda Ming.

“Your clothing has holes in it. The men will be transporting ores to the tribe

tomorrow, I'll ask them to bring back some fabric. I can make some cloths for you."

Walda Ming happily took it. Xia dynasty people were much more honest compared to people in modern times. At least more honest than the modern women he saw before. If something is given to them, they'll take it. If they weren't given it, they won't take it.

"Let them bring back some pots of salt."

Donford Wu said.

"Okay."

Walda Ming replied while nodding her head.

Donford Wu lifted the large pheasant he hunted today towards her.

"Go home now, your children are still waiting for you back home."

Taking the large pheasant, she turned her head towards the cave. The little guy was crying inside.

"No need to pay attention to it, it just separated from its mother. Even if i fed it, it doesn't eat. Go."

Donford Wu urged her to leave.

Walda Ming took the large pheasant down the mountain. Sitting at the campfire, he stared off into the distance. He didn't blame the shaman, he could only blame himself for not being able to explain his identity and where he came from. With his temper, once someone told him to leave, would immediately leave, wouldn't even stay for one more minute. The reason why he choose to stay for another half a month was because he wanted to give Walda Ming and her two children more food to store.

Sitting outside the cave for half an hour, Donford Wu stood up and walked into the cave wanting to sleep. The little guy already grew silent. Hearing footsteps, it started to hiccup, Donford Wu couldn't sleep because of the noise, he could only run outside to sleep.

Waking up in the morning, Donford Wu went to the valley on the south western side. There were only bones left of the corpse of the animal that was

killed by the human shaped fire. The three Fire clan clansman's skeleton was nowhere to be seen. Most likely, they were taken back home by their clansmen.

Shooing away a few large scavenger birds, he picked a few bones to take back.

That unknown animal might have lived for many years, its bones were abnormally hard, and this was what he cared for the most. The bow and arrow's might has always been without strength. The problem wasn't in the bow, but was in the arrows. Bamboo arrows were too light, it couldn't be shoot far, and the tips weren't any good either, he wanted to use these bones to make a quiver of bone arrows.

The little guy that was trapped in the stone encirclement started to cry when he heard his footsteps. Donford Wu went over to take a look. Going back outside the cave, he started to work. Because the bones were too strong, the grinding process took a very long and difficult time. But he wasn't in a hurry, Xia dynasty didn't have any kind of metal except for copper, and copper was clearly not suitable as arrows. They were too heavy, they couldn't be shoot far. The hardness wasn't high enough either, not sharp enough. If these special bones could be grinded into bone arrows, it's might would be frightening.

At noon, he used a bowl to place water inside the rock encirclement, the little guy didn't drink, only turning the bowl over.

That day, he went to check on the encirclement five or six times, but he didn't give the little panda anything to eat.

The next day at noon, he once again filled a bowl with water and placed it inside. This time, the panda drank, but he still didn't feed anything to it.

The third day at dawn, the little guy finally pooped. Donford Wu looked at the fecal matter, discovering the poop was slightly smelly, mixed inside it were a few seeds of fruits.

If it only drank milk, the poop wouldn't be smelly. The stench meant that even though the little guy hasn't completely stopped drinking milk, but it has already started to eat meat, and the few fruit seeds clearly showed what kind of fruits it ate.

After making sure of this, he immediately went out to find something for the

little guy to eat. After the moon raised up high in sky, he brought back a rabbit and a couple of wild pears.

What was unthinkable was that the little guy's appetite was extremely good, it sat a corner, finishing off the main course, it ate another seven fruits.

"A food dump, it really is a food dump."

Donford Wu ticked his tongue while shaking his head.

After saying this, a strange sound came from outside the cave. Donford Wu turned his head around to take a look, discovering a silhouette flash on the southern mountain ridge, coming from the west, it flashed towards the east. Donford Wu quickly went out, at this time, the woman shaman came fluttering down from a large tree on the western bump, showing up in front of him, she asked in a serious voice.

"Where did you just go?"

Chapter 10 Mysterious Assassins

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-10/>

Chapter 10 Mysterious Assassins

The tone of her voice made Donford Wu feel disgusted, but he didn't say anything, or did he turn around to leave. He just tilted his head and stood there.

"I'm asking you, where did you go?"

The lady shaman emphasized her tone.

Donford Wu pretended to be confused, at the same time, he said in Chinese.

"You dumb fuck, the person you were chasing already ran towards the east."

The lady shaman didn't doubt him in the slightest. Slowly asking one word at a time.

"Did you just go to our village?"

This time, she spoke extremely slowly, and Walda Ming must have told the shaman that now, he could engage in simple conversations. This time, he couldn't pretend to be confused. He just shook his head and said.

"No."

"You really haven't?"

The lady shaman raised the copper pole in her hand to emphasize her tone even more.

"I really haven't, I was only at the cave."

Donford Wu said while shaking his head.

The lady shaman didn't believe him. Using the copper pole to move him to the side, she walked towards the cave.

Just at his moment, a crying scream from deep within the throat resounded from the bottom of the mountain, it came from a woman. What she screamed was.

“My child!”

The scream from down the mountain stopped the lady shaman in her tracks. Bending down to store power, she rushed towards the west. From the top of tress, she went back towards the village as fast as possible.

The lady shaman probably used some type of light step magic. Every time she lifted off from a tree, she could glide for twenty something meters. If he saw this in the past, he might have felt surprised, but he saw the speed of the human shaped flame. Compared to his/her flight in the wind, the lady shaman was but a jumping frog.

“Give me back my child!”

Another cry rang out from the village. This cry was clearly not from the same person. This person’s voice sounded deeper and course.

“Fuck, she was deceived by a decoy.”

Donford Wu rushed into the cave, picking up his bow and quiver of arrows, he ran out. Thinking for a bit, he went back to take his body armor. Running while putting it on, he didn’t know exactly what happened in the village, but from the two screams, it seems to be that young children were hurt. He went down the mountain only to protect Walda Ming and her two children.

There was a moon tonight. Donford Wu borrowed the moonlight to rush out of forest. While running, he heard another ear piercing womanly scream and a child’s frightened cry coming from the village. The men of the village were still haven’t come back from transporting the ores, so the village was mostly only filled with women and children.

The mountain path between the cave and the village was five or six kilometers. Before ten minutes, Donford Wu already arrived at the entrance of the village. Walda Ming’s house was at the front of the village, so he first ran over to go check. He only saw the door opened, Walda Ming and her children were nowhere to be seen.

At this moment, there were no women or children running around, the noise was concentrated in the village center. There, light could be seen, this meant that after the villagers discovered it was dangerous, they all went to the lady shaman’s residence to seek protection.

He was familiar with the village and its paths. He quickly ran over to the lady shaman's house. About a hundred meters away, he slowed his pace down. Now that the situation is unknown, and he knew nothing about the enemy. Just rushing in is absolutely a mistake.

At this time, the screams from women stopped, only the children kept on crying. Donford Wu used the trees between houses to silently close into the village center, being only fifty meters away, Donford Wu crouched down between the trees of two houses.

The lady shaman was fighting with two black clothed men right now, the children and women of the village hiding behind her. The armless middle aged man was on the ground not far away, his three limbs touching the ground, it was unknown if he was alive or not.

After a quick and short search, Donford Wu discovered Walda Ming and her two children in the mass of people. Now that he relaxed, he started observing the battle. The copper pole was the lady shaman's weapon, her opponents were using strange black colored broadswords. They were all using rather normal martial arts, not too different from mixed martial arts. Even though the lady shaman wasn't too hard pressed fighting against the masked individuals, but the masked people didn't seem to want to fight directly with her. While attacking, they all tried to go around the lady shaman to attack the women and children behind her.

Because the situation didn't call for it, Donford Wu wasn't in too much in a hurry. Saying it in another way, was that he wanted to attack, but couldn't. This was because the masked people were always moving extremely quickly, he had no way to accurately shoot them, if he shot, then he might hit the women and children.

According to their figures, both of the masked people were men, except for their weapons clashing, they always avoided touching the lady shaman's body directly. There were multiple times that the lady shaman exposed openings, but the two masked men didn't use their legs or open hands to attack her.

After a long while, they finally changed tactics, they didn't try to go around the lady shaman but attacked her directly. Just like this, the lady shaman was finally

placed in a disadvantage, being attacked on both sides, she was too tired to handle it.

Seeing this, Donford Wu started to quietly circle around counter clockwise. He was now at the south side, facing the tree people and the women and children behind them, putting risks on releasing arrows. Now that he was going to the east side, he wouldn't have this problem.

But only after ten meters or so, he didn't dare move again. This was because he saw a person on top of a tree on the east side, the person was only masked, the breasts were not small, it was a woman.

Donford Wu secretly sized up the woman. This person should be the human figure he saw at the cave. Because he showed up, the lady shaman wasn't pulled too far away from the village, if not, she wouldn't have been able to get back in time.

Just when he was thinking of what to do, a breaking of metal resounded from the north side. One of the black clothed men's broadsword was broken in two by the lady shaman's copper pole.

With an opportunity in hand, the other black clothed man threw his black broadsword towards the crowd at the north side.

Hearing the frightened screams from the crowd, she turned around. Seeing that she had no way to block the black broadsword, she quickly reached out her hand, a red light appearing around her body, her left hand moving at quick speeds. Following the series of movements, a yellow thing flew out from the house, blocking the black broadsword in midair.

"Telekinesis!"

Donford Wu secretly exclaimed.

With a bang, the black broadsword and the yellow thing fell down at the same time. This thing wasn't something special, it was the copper grinder under the shade of the roof.

Seeing the black broadsword being blocked by the lady shaman, the black clothed man back flipped into the crowd. Seeing the murder jumping towards them, the hiding crowd screamed and tried to escape. That black clothed man

used the mess to snatch a swaddle from a woman's embrace. Raising it high over his head, he wanted to throw the child in the swaddle to death.

With the situation turning critical, Donford Wu didn't care anymore, readying his bow, he shoot an arrow towards the black clothed man.

The arrow squarely hit the black clothed man in the jugular, his movements immediately becoming sluggish. The lady shaman flashed over, taking the swaddle from the black clothed man and giving him back to his mother.

The other black clothed man seeing his partner get killed, roared while charging forwards. Twisting in midair, he back kicked the lady shaman.

"Elementary Earth Qi? You're part of the Earth clan?!"

The lady shaman exclaimed in surprise.

Her opponent didn't reply, picking up the black broadsword blocked by the copper grinder, he tried to kill the baby in the swaddle.

This time Donford Wu didn't release an arrow, for one the lady shaman could get there in time, and two, the black clothed woman standing in the tree was searching for him according from the direction of the arrow.

Until now, Donford Wu thought that the black clothed man didn't touch any part of the lady shaman was because of something on her body, but now he finally understood why that happened. They didn't want to touch the lady shaman was because once they touched, the lady shaman could expose their identity from the Qi within their bodies.

With his identity exposed, the black clothed man didn't have to worry about anything. Reaching both his hands out, he used telekinesis to raise two rocks the size of basins and threw it at the lady shaman.

Donford Wu saw the scene happen vividly, when the black clothed man used telekinesis to raise the rocks, he also irradiated a faint red glow.

The lady shaman twirled her copper pole to fly the rocks away, once again rushing to block the black clothed man.

The woman in the tree didn't attack, Donford Wu also didn't dare to move.

Right now, he was in hiding, he had a sure advantage. Once he is exposed, this advantage would vanish. He would immediately be attacked by the woman in the tree, he wasn't sure he could win against that woman, because she most likely also knew how to use magic.

Donford Wu slowly took out an arrow and placed it on the bow, patiently waiting for his chance. Using the moonlight, he could see where the woman was searching. Just when she looking at an area right behind him, he quickly released an arrow at her.

The woman in the tree didn't show any sign of noticing, in a flash, the arrow arrived at her jugular. Next a red glow flashed out, blocking the arrow's path, the woman suddenly staring at his position.

"Fucking hell, I took the bait."

Donford Wu secretly cursed himself. It was clear that his opponent was trying to bait him out to determine his position.

Naturally, after determined his position, she raised a black broadsword and flew towards him.

In a split second, Donford Wu once again shoot out another arrow, but the arrow wasn't aimed at the black clothed woman, but was shoot at the black clothed man fighting with the lady shaman.

That black clothed man didn't take any precautions, but once the arrow reached him, his body once again glowed in a red light, after a flash, the arrow dropped towards the ground.

Even though the arrow didn't hit the black clothed man, but it distracted him. Using this opportunity, the lady shaman raised her copper pole and stroke his head. In a cry of pain, he fell to the ground.

At that time, the black clothed woman already reached Donford Wu, her black broadsword flashing, she slashed towards his throat.

Seeing the broadsword coming down, Donford Wu didn't dodge, but rather took out his dagger backhanded and jumped slicing at his opponent's throat. The body armor he was wearing feared jabs but not slashes.

Not knowing he would do such a thing, she was in a shock. Without any fancy moves, she turned around and dodged, borrowing power from a tree, she rushed towards the woman carrying the swaddle.

“Be careful, there’s another one coming.”

Donford Wu warned the lady shaman in a loud voice.

The lady shaman was checking the pulse of the fallen black clothed man, hearing Donford Wu’s voice, she quickly stood up. Throwing the copper pole to defend against the broadsword thrown towards the mother and child, she turned around and flipped up. Pulling at the ankles of the black clothed woman, they both fell onto the ground.

Donford Wu quickly ran over, at the moment, the two women were rolling on the ground ripping at each other. The dagger in his hand searching for an opportunity to attack.

“Don’t kill her, I need her alive.”

The lady shaman yelled.

Just finishing her sentence, the mask on the shaman’s face was punched into dust, at the same time, the black cloth on the black clothed woman’s face was pulled down.

After a moment of astonishment, both of them covered their faces at the same time.....

Chapter 12 Setting Off

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-12/>

Chapter 12 Setting Off

Walda Ming started shaking all round when she heard the news. It was no wonder she was scared, more than two hundred babies were murdered and all in one night. Every Gold clan member should all be scared too, because they didn't know what scheme was hidden behind this, and they didn't know what doom would befall the Gold clan.

Hearing this, Donford Wu frowned without speaking. The black clothed woman that was caught was an Earth clan shaman, which means the Earth clan should be the figures behind this matter. But the Earth clan rules all of the Nine Provinces, and controls the center. Plus the Gold clan is its vassal state. Enormous amount of tributes would be provided to the Earth clan every year, why would the Earth clan want to kill the children of the Gold clan?

According to Walda Ming, her village was one of the rather small villages in one of the Gold clan tribes. The Earth clan sent three shamans to a small village, tens to a tribe, the Earth clan would have at least sent more than a hundred shamans. Also adding in the shamans of the Gold clan tribes and the Gold clan capital, the Earth clan would have should sent more than two hundred people in this operation, and adding up all the Gold clan shamans, they wouldn't even reach a hundred. Without question, for the Earth clan to send out such a force, they must have had a must accomplish thinking in their minds. This kind of large scale operation must have been ordered by the upper echelons of the Earth clan.

You must know that there isn't any kind of wall that can stop all wind in the world (meaning information goes around). After being attacked by such a large scale ambush, the Gold clan surely would chase the perpetrator. If they know it is the Earth clan, then they would make suitable actions against the Earth clan. The Earth clan must have thought of this. What exactly is the reason for them to take such a risk to assassinate the children of the Gold clan. If you say it's for revenge or punishment, then why would they need to cover their faces, and

there isn't any reason to pick the babies that were killed this year.

There was still another important clue, from the way the three Earth clan shamans attacked, they tried to avoid injuring innocent people. This meant that before they set off, they were ordered by the upper echelons to do so. So except for the babies that were born this year, they had to try their best not to kill anyone else.

From this point, it wasn't hard to guess that the upper echelons of the Earth clan didn't want to fully turn their backs against the Gold clan. Coming to this, it wasn't hard to figure out what the mental state of the upper echelons of the Earth clan were. They were afraid of angering the Gold clan, but this operation must have been done. Saying it directly, they had to just do it, they couldn't not do it even if they didn't want to.

"Food Dump ran out!"

Walda Ming's frightened cry cut of Donford Wu's thinking.

"He ran out multiple times already, don't think about him."

Donford Wu raised his hands. Because he was missing important clues, he could figure out the mentality of the upper echelons of the Earth clan, but he couldn't guess the motive.

"If there isn't anything else, I'll be going."

Walda Ming stood up.

Donford Wu nodded his head.

"K, come earlier tomorrow."

Walda Ming nodded and then turned around to leave.

Now that Walda Ming has left, Donford Wu once again went to grinding bone arrows. The bone arrows were made out of the leg bone from an unknown organism, every leg bone could be grinded into four pieces. Every piece could be made into a single bone arrow. Four leg bones could be grinded into sixteen bone arrows, but he only grinded three up till now.

Two in the afternoon, an unwelcomed guest came by the cave. It was the armless man with a message.

"Tomorrow, the shaman will send the captive back to the tribe, while sending you away as well."

Donford Wu frowned while looking in his eyes, then nodded his head.

After the armless man left, Donford Wu backed his bow and arrows to go out and hunt. This time, he'll be going to the east, going through the stream and entering the Fire clan's territory. There was a lot more prey there than other places, after going there and back three times, he brought back tons of prey.

Tomorrow, he would have to leave. Donford Wu's mood was a bit down. All those days he stayed here, except for resting his wounds and learning the language, the main reason was that he first came to this world by the river by the east side, staying here made him feel more close to modern time. He had to leave tomorrow, and he didn't know what the outside world was like, even more so, he didn't know what was waiting for him, his future was filled with variables and unknowns.

But at last, he wasn't a sentimental person. Third aunt had a phrase that influenced him the most. Which was always think on the bright side, since it already past, you only need to walk forward one step at a time.

From all this, there was still one thing that left him uneasy. Food Dump was still small, it could only eat but not hunt, and Walda Ming is afraid of it, so she won't adopt it. Going back a step, even if Walda Ming was willing to adopt it, she wouldn't even be able to. Don't look at it to be so small, he could eat a kilo of meat each day and still would be hungry.

If you have milk then you can become the mom, if you have things to eat then you can become the dad. After being fed for these few days, Food Dump was really close to him. Every night, even if it climbed out, it wouldn't just run around, but rather go by his side and sleep, it depended on him a lot, and he didn't have the heart to just abandon it.

After thinking for a long time, Donford Wu used his dagger to cut up two pieces of the black face cloth into small strings. Using the body armor and the silk from the corpses he made a pouch. Since he couldn't abandon it, he could

only bring it with him.

Before the sun raised the next day, Walda Ming already came by, because the village just had an accident, she wasn't assured enough to leave her children at home, so she brought them with her.

Donford Wu lit the bonfire, discovering that Walda Ming's eyes were red.

"I heard that you had to leave today, so I stayed up all night to make you these clothes and shoes."

Walda Ming passed the clothes and shoes over to Donford Wu.

"I can still wear my shoes, these pairs, you keep them."

Donford Wu received the clothes and gave back the shoes to Walda Ming. The pair of shoes were made from cloth and beast skin, but Walda Ming only wore grass shoes herself.

"You keep them."

Walda Ming refused while she shook her head.

Donford Wu took a glance at Walda Ming, after hesitating for a moment, he took back the shoes.

"The prey I hunted yesterday are all inside the cave, use some salt to cure it."

Walda Ming nodded her head. Even though her children was by her side, she still couldn't hold in her tears.

"You can use these two blades, this one's broken, so just keep it just in case."

Donford Wu placed the black broadswords by Walda Ming's side.

Walda Ming choked while nodding her head.

Donford Wu took out a three pronged bone pitchfork. This was made with wood and the strange beast's bones, it was about a meter long.

"After I leave, try not to go to the east side to catch fish. If you really do have to, then use this. Once you finished catching fish leave immediately, don't stay there too long."

After Donford Wu finished talking, he saw that Walda Ming once again started

crying, hurriedly standing up and walking towards the cave.

"I still haven't peeled the skin off of a few, I'll help you take care of it and you can bring them back."

Half an hour later, Donford Wu finished taking care of the prey, running to a small stream at the west side, he took a bath. Changing into the grey linen clothes, he gave the worn—out camo to Walda Ming.

"I'll give this to you, as a memento."

"You're going to come back?"

Walda Ming received the camo.

"I don't know."

Donford Wu shook his head.

"If it's too bad out there, then come back, we are forever friends."

Walda Ming stated.

"It's good friends."

Donford Wu smiled slightly while nodding his head.

Seven in the morning, the shaman set off, coming with them were nine people. Six strong men and one woman, the woman carried the lucky baby that survived that night. The Earth clan lady shaman was tied up to something like a bamboo made stretcher, lifted by two men.

They walked in the front while Donford Wu stayed tens of meters behind.

This was a winding mountain path that went through a mountain range. Because it was needed to transport ores, the mountain path wasn't steep, there wasn't any large steeps hills and most of it was straight paths. But the price of this was that they had to go around the mountains, walking a lot of unneeded road.

Donford Wu wasn't in a hurry, he originally didn't have anywhere to go. Going to the tribe earlier or later didn't have too much of a difference to him.

Two in the afternoon, the lady shaman stopped. The crowd sat down to rest and eat. They all brought rations, Donford Wu also brought things to eat, but

they were raw. He went to find some branches to make a small fire, but who would've thought that just when he lit it, the lady shaman ran over, using her copper pole to spread and extinguish the fire.

Donford Wu raised his head to take a look at the lady shaman, not asking why, there must have been a reason why she did this.

The lady shaman also didn't explain why he couldn't start a fire. Staring at Donford Wu, she turned around and left.

The Earth clan lady shaman didn't eat these few days. The lady shaman might have been worried that the captive might starve to death, so she gave her a piece of cured meat. The Earth clan lady shaman titled her head to one side, not eating.

There wasn't anyone who gave Donford Wu something to eat. He wasn't surprised, he helped the villagers, but he also stopped them from shaming the Earth clan lady shaman. This meant that even though the villagers didn't see him as an enemy, but they also didn't see him as a friend.

Because he had to carry the quiver of arrows, Food Dump was hanged in front of Donford Wu's chest. When everyone rested, Donford Wu would let him out. Food Dump would run into the forest to take a dump, coming back, it would pick up a wild fruit. After taking a bite and discovering it didn't taste good, it threw the fruit away back handed.

Resting for half an hour, the lady shaman called the crowd to continue moving. Donford Wu carried Food Dump while following in the back. On the path, they arrived at a bamboo forest. Breaking a piece of bamboo, he gave it to Food Dump. From Food Dump you could hear the sounds of "KaCha" while it bit into the bamboo. It didn't like the thing very much, after shredding it, it would spit it out, treating it as grinding his death.

After moving for a bit, a roar came out of east side. The roar came from the mountain peak on the east side of the mountain they were currently on. The distance in a straight line was about five or six kilometers. The roar continued on with "N, Ah, N, Ah"s, which sounded like a donkey, but the sounds more stretched.

Hearing the roar, the men all stopped at the same time without, nervously

looking at the lady shaman.

The lady shaman hesitated for a bit then continued walking forward, everyone carefully followed behind her, cautiously, they seemed like they were walking on thin ice

Walking carefully for two kilometers, everyone arrived at the flat area between two mountain peaks. At this moment, another strange roar came from the east, everyone once again stopping.

“It seems like it’s not too happy today.”

A man said to the lady shaman.

Even though Donford Wu didn’t know exactly who the “it” was, but he could guess it was an animal in the dense forest the crowd extremely feared, and this animal stayed here for a long time, everyone in the village seemed to know it.

The lady shaman nodded her head, stretching out her hand towards the man that talked with her, the man took out a grey pot from a bundle and passed it over to her. The pot was rather round and it had a radius of around thirty centimeters.

The lady shaman received the pot, opening the lid, she held the pot while walking forward.

Donford Wu was rather far away, so he couldn’t see what was inside the pot, but from the lady shaman’s actions, the pot should be something that the animal in the forest liked.

Donford Wu started to become nervous, if the lady shaman could defeat that fellow, then there wouldn’t be any need to give presents to it so that they can be green light to continue walking. But using presents to green light was on the mood of the “lord”, and it seems that today, the “lord” wasn’t happy.....

Chapter 11 Not Allowed to Torture the Captive

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-11-not-allowed-to-torture-the-captive/>

Chapter 11 Not Allowed to Torture the Captive

The strange actions of the two froze Donford Wu. After his mind came back to him, he immediately turned around and walked towards the west to pick up arrows off the ground. Taking out the bone arrow from a corpse's throat, he didn't look back even once. Even though he didn't know why they covered their faces, but he could guess that it had something to do with their culture. There was one rule regarding secrets in the troops, don't look at secrets you aren't supposed to look at, if you do, then pretend you didn't see it.

After the mask and cloth came falling down, there was three to five seconds before they both covered their faces. There was moon hanging overhead tonight, and Donford Wu wasn't blind. He now knew how they looked like. The lady shaman had a sharp oval face, the nosebleed running down her face didn't ruin her clear complexion. She should be a few years older than him, about twenty six or seven years old. The age of the black clothed woman wasn't old, her age might not even reach twenty. She had a big eyes and a round face and some looks to go with it. They both had one thing in common, they both had pure white skin. But Donford Wu didn't know if it was because they covered their faces for so long, or something else.

Only when he out the arrow from the corpse's throat did Donford Wu discover the arrow was the one made out of bones. In these couple of days, he only grinded out a single one. The other two arrows were normal bamboo ones. Donford Wu started to think the reason why the arrows didn't hit was because of the material they were made of.

Looking carefully at the bone arrow, Walda Ming ran over with her children.

"Why'd you come?"

"I came to.....take a look."

Donford Wu originally wanted to say he came to save her and her children, but

he changed his mind in the middle of it.

“Good thing you came.”

Walda Ming still wasn’t over the ordeal.

Donford Wu laughed and ruffled the two children’s hair. Bit far away, the chatter of women started coming out. Without even having to ask, the lady shaman must have gotten hold of the black clothed woman with the help of the ladies.

“Did you see the lady shaman’s face?”

Walda Ming asked in a low voice.

“Nope, what about it?”

Donford Wu picked up the black broadsword that was broken in half. The broadsword had some weight to it, it should be made out of metal.

“Good thing you didn’t see it, if not, she would’ve killed you.”

Walda Ming stated.

“Walda, go get the sheep tendons.”

A shout came from a woman behind them, even though they all had the same surname, but they don’t call people out with their last name, only their first name, and most of their first names only had a single word, so it sounded a bit bad when it was called out. (Most Chinese names in modern times are made with three characters, but Walda Ming’s only has two.)

Hearing the shout, Walda Ming walked away with her children. Donford Wu kneeled down to the dead black clothed man to search his body. His search ended up in a disappointment, taking off the corpse’s clothes, the corpse didn’t have anything on its body.

“What are you doing?”

The lady shaman said in a cold voice behind him.

“I can wear his clothes.”

Donford Wu continued his search.

“Don’t take things from the dead.”

The lady shaman’s voice started to have an unwelcoming tone to it.

“I killed this person.”

Donford Wu didn’t have the patience to say anymore, if not for his help, the lady shaman wouldn’t be able to defeat all three opponents. Not only did she not say thanks, but she was extremely unwelcoming.

Facing this answer, she took in a large breath. But at last, she warmed her tone a bit.

“Fine, you decide.”

Donford Wu took off the corpse’s clothes, not even leaving the pants. After the underwear was taken off, he took off the corpse’s black cloth covering the face. When the black cloth was off, the face of a young man was exposed. His age was also not high, around twenty years old.

“Why doesn’t he have a tattoo?”

Donford Wu turned his head and asked the lady shaman that was getting ready to walk away. At this moment, the lady shaman already placed on another mask.

“The Earth clan doesn’t have any tattoos.”

The lady shaman didn’t turn back, she walked straight towards her house.

Donford Wu furrowed his brows. The lady shaman clearly was hiding words in between words, meaning that he also didn’t have any tattoos, and that he was suspected to be part of the Earth clan.

Even though he wasn’t happy, but since she didn’t say anything directly, he couldn’t say anything back. Taking the clothes and the other two unbroken black broadswords into his arms, he walked towards the shaman’s house. The place had so little things, he couldn’t waste them.

At this time, the black clothed woman was already tied up to a wooden post in front of the house, the women of the village were beating her, even kicking.

The black clothed woman gritted her teeth and bared with it, not making a

sound.

Donford Wu seeing that she was so stubborn, he felt like he couldn't take it anymore. Yelling at the crowd with a large voice.

"If you beat her to death, then she can't say anything."

After hearing Donford Wu's shout, the crowd of women that were beating the black clothed woman started to stop one at a time, turning their heads to look at him. After looking at him, they turned towards the lady shaman. Seeing that the lady shaman didn't have any motives to stop them, they once again started scratching and beating the black clothed woman, scratching her face and pulling her hair, they ripped open her clothes and took her ** (This was in the raw)

Seeing this, Donford Wu was absolutely furious, he quickly stepped forward to block the crowd.

"Stop."

Hearing this, the crowd stared at him. The lady shaman at one side said to him in a cold voice.

"It isn't your place to speak."

"If you want to kill her then don't hit her, if you want to hit her then you can't kill her."

Donford Wu raised his voice. This woman was a partner in crime. He wouldn't give a shit even if they killed her. But he couldn't accept that she had no way to fight back but the crowd still beating and humiliating her, torturing captives violated the Geneva Conventions.

The lady shaman opened a path in the crowd and arrived in front of him. Sneering, she looked at Donford Wu.

"You know her?"

"No."

Donofrd Wu said without hesitation.

"Then why are you protecting her?"

The lady shaman asked.

“Because they didn’t humiliate the villagers before they killed anyone, that’s why before you kill her, you cannot hit her.”

Donford Wu looked straight into the lady shaman’s eyes.

“I’m the one who has the say in this village.”

The lady shaman gestured towards the crowd, the latter once again rushing forward.

Donford Wu dropped the things in his arms and took out his dagger in a horizontal stance in front of his chest. Seeing this, the crowd hurriedly stepped back.

The lady shaman turned furious, Donford Wu furrowed his eyebrows.

“I don’t care if you kill her, but before you kill her, you can’t torture her.”

They stared at each other for tens of seconds. At last, the lady shaman waved her hand at the crowd.

“Everyone one go back, I’ll take care of this.”

The women of the village didn’t dare not listen to the words of the shaman. But before they left, they all spat at Donford Wu, expressing disdain, venting their anger.

“Just kill me.”

The black clothed woman tied to the wooden post said without any strength.

Donford Wu didn’t say anything. Retracting his dagger, he went to pick up the things he dropped.

The lady shaman wasn’t in a hurry to interrogate the black clothed woman, so she first went to help the armless man. Donford Wu also didn’t stay there for long, holding the things, he went back to his own cave.

With one of the black broadswords broken, he used the light from flames to determine that the blade was made of something close to pig iron. The clothes was made out of silk, much better than the coarse clothes the villagers wore.

After arriving back for not too long, he once again left the cave, the little guy was hungry, and it kept on making noise.

The next morning, Walda Ming came by.

“And I don’t you wouldn’t come back.”

Laughed Donford Wu.

“And why is that?”

Walda Ming placed a pot down on the ground.

“Because I stopped the women of the village from beating up the black clothed woman.”

Said Donford Wu.

“Anyone who spat at you are all idiots, if not for you last night, the shaman wouldn’t be able to beat all three.”

Walda Ming said in low voice.

Hearing Walda Ming say this, Donford Wu’s mood brightened up a bit.

“And that woman?”

“Still tied there, the woman is a shaman of the Earth clan, the shaman wants to bring her to the tribe.”

Stated Walda Ming.

Donford Wu nodded his head, he took out the food out of the pot. Today was the mountain goat he hunted a few days back, after so long, the taste turned bad a bit.

“So how many people died yesterday?”

Donford Wu casually asked.

“Two kids, both very very young, they were still on milk.”

Sighed Walda Ming.

Hearing this, Donford Wu frowned a bit. Last night, when he arrived at the village, he saw the battle. In the whole process, the three black clothed people wanted to attack a woman holding a swaddle. More correctly, they wanted to attack the swaddle. Not only that, after the lady shaman was attracted away,

the remaining black clothed men had enough time to go through a massacre, but they didn't just kill anyone. They only killed two kids. This meant that the three had clear objectives, which was to kill children, and the children had to be babies that haven't gotten off milk yet.

Why would they want to do this? He couldn't find an answer from his own mind, and he didn't ask Walda Ming, because she wouldn't know either.

"When are the men coming back?"

Donford Wu started another topic. Last night, he offended the lady shaman, he didn't want to stay here any longer. Saying it simply, even if wanted to stay here, the lady shaman wouldn't let him. The men of the village left long ago, so they should be arriving very soon. If they don't come back, then the village wouldn't have enough cured meat. With the weather so hot and no salt, the prey wouldn't last long.

"They should be still unloading ores at the tribe, they'll need three or four days before they came back."

Walda Ming stated.

Donford Wu nodded his head, holding a pot of water to the cave, he went back into the cave to feed the panda water. Only now did he discover that the food he brought back yesterday was already finished by it.

"Food dump."

Donford Wu shook his head while he laughed.

"Food Dump? You named it?"

Walda Ming asked without understanding. She didn't understand the words of Donford Wu, because he said that in a different language.

"Ha Ha, yeah, it'll be called Food Dump from now on."

Donford Wu laughed out loud.

Food Dump was down on the ground drinking, it didn't know Donford Wu named it, and even more didn't know that it was an extremely bad name.

After finishing his food, Walda Ming brought the pot back down the mountain,

he once again looked at the black broadswords. He didn't see incorrectly last night, the three broadswords were all made with pig iron. Pig iron is extremely common in modern times. Most of the manholes were made out of pig iron, the most special thing about this metal is that it becomes brittle.

But no matter how brittle it was, it was still metal. Right now, he was worried on how he could chop wood to help Walda Ming fix her house, but now, the two broadswords had some use.

He didn't know anything about Mortise and Tenon construction, so he used string to tie them. After a busy two days, Walda Ming's house has become the sturdiest one there. The only con was that to ensure that it would last long, the string he used was treated with animal fat, easily attracting ants. But after Walda Ming smeared it with a kind of plant paste, the ants didn't come back.

These two days, the black clothed woman was still tied up to the wooden post, enduring the glaring sun and the pouring rain, and she wasn't fed any food. Donford Wu couldn't take it, using the night, he secretly went down the mountain two times to give her water. Every time he went to give water, he didn't try to avoid the lady shaman. Since he knew the lady shaman was secretly watching him, he went without a care.

The first time, the black clothed woman didn't drink, even not looking at him. The second time, the black clothed woman drank a small amount, then said a word of thanks.

After the third day, the men that were transporting ores came back. Bringing back food and salt, they also brought back a freighting news. The same night as the ambush of the village, tens of Gold clan villages were also ambushed. More than two hundred babies that were born this year were all killed.....

Chapter 13 Celestial Master of the White Tiger's Mount

<http://novelcow.com/wotsm-index/chapter-13/>

Chapter 13 Celestial Master of the White Tiger's Mount

The lady shaman walked forward while holding the pot, everyone else followed behind her. After observing the surroundings, Donford Wu helplessly followed them. The south and north side of the mountain peak was all cliffs and valleys, there was only one road you could follow.

Going up and down for a few hundred meters, once again, a roar came from the east. The roar lasted twice as long as the one before. It still sounded like “N, Ah”. The “N” was a deep nose noise, while the “Ah” was an ear shaking roar. Even though he didn’t know exactly what the animal was, but he could hear that the fellow wasn’t just unhappy, but was releasing its anger.

The lady shaman might have known this, but she didn’t stop.

While following the crowd, Donford Wu’s mind was filled with doubt. From how the crowd spoke before, he could guess this animal already lived here for many years. Such a violent animal would without a doubt, be a serious threat to the ore transporting villagers. Even if the lady shaman couldn’t defeat it herself, she could still report to the higher ups and invite a more powerful shaman to remove it. But she didn’t do that, rather she prepared food for the animal. This clearly was compromising and conniving towards a criminal. This would only help the criminal become more and more cocky and more and more violent.

While doubting, he himself prepared to defend himself. He could already see a large tree being shaken around violently. From the huge crown of the tree, it wasn’t hard to guess how large the tree was. To be able to shake such a tree meant that it was one big fellow.

There wasn’t a path on the north side of the mountain peak. The path goes around the south side of the mountain waist, from the west side going to the south side. When Donford Wu saw the animal, he thought it was going to be

some mysterious unknown animal, but who would've thought he actually could recognize the animal. It was a huge black bear. In this forest, black bears could be seen all around, looking almost the same as modern black bears. But this fellow was more than three times larger than its fellow black bears.

Seeing the black bear, his thinking changed. He didn't want to defend himself, he wanted to run. The reason why he decided this was not only because the black bear was huge, but also its gaze when it suddenly turned its head around. Its left eye was scarred, only leaving its right eye. He could see from the surviving right eye that it had a violent and murderous aura.

The giant bear discovering the crowd arrive, released the poor trees from its sharp claws. Its four claws touching the ground, it walked towards them.

Seeing the giant bear coming over, Donford Wu secretly prepared to turn around at great speeds. But the giant bear didn't leap towards them, but rather it walked over to a boulder on the north side of the road. Stopping there, it used its single eye to look at the lady shaman west of the boulder.

The lady shaman kneeled down with both knees, dropping the copper pole, she raised the pot up with both hands. At the same time, the crowd behind her all kneeled down.

Donford Wu was shocked, he didn't think that the lady shaman would have no backbone to this extent. Giving wild beasts food was already shameful enough, but they actually all kneeled down towards the giant bear.

"You guys can kneel all you want, since I don't kneel anyways."

Donford Wu secretly said.

The boulder the giant bear was standing by was about half the size of a house. Scratch marks filled its surface. Ten meters around the boulder, there were many fallen trees. The widest one couldn't even be held between two people. All these trees were all taken down by the giant bear. Every tree had the remains of claw marks. Not only that, from the corrosion of the fallen trees, it wasn't hard to guess that this giant bear already lived for a very long time.

The giant bear was breathing heavily while angrily staring at the lady shaman. Donford Wu already didn't have a good image of the lady shaman, now that she

actually kneeled down towards an animal, he started having negative thoughts about her. It would be great if the giant bear killed the lady shaman with one big claw slap.

Too bad his wish didn't come true. The giant bear didn't kill the lady shaman. After getting its breath back, it slowly reached its paws out to take the pot over the lady shaman's head. Flipping the pot over, it dumped out the contents onto the boulder. Waiting until all the honey like substance came out, he returned the pot back to the lady shaman.

Donford Wu couldn't even close his mouth. He saw no small amount of broad day light robberies, but this was the first time he saw that after taking the money out of the wallet, they gave the wallet back.

Taking the pot back, the lady shaman stood up. Waving towards the crowd, everyone walked slowly and quietly in a single file line.

Donford Wu carefully followed behind, once he got close, he saw that the fur around the giant bear's mouth had already turned white. This meant its age was already extremely old.

The giant bear was currently licking the honey on the boulder. Similar transactions might've happened many times in the past. The place where the honey was in was already licked into the size of a face washing basin.

Donford Wu walked past the giant bear, it didn't show any interest in him.

"Wa, Wa, Wa~"

Just when he wanted to sigh a breath of relief, Food Dump started to yell.

The giant bear raised its head.

With this happening, Donford Wu covered the opening slowly, turning around, the giant bear was using its single eye to stare directly at him.

Donford Wu didn't dare move, at this moment, the giant bear was less than three meters away, he definitely couldn't run away.

Discovering Donford Wu being blocked, the lady shaman that was at the front hurriedly turned around. Standing in front of him, she asked in a low voice.

"What did you do?"

“I didn’t do anything.”

Donford Wu felt extremely embarrassed, who would’ve thought that the lady shaman he wanted the giant bear the bitch slap actually came to save him at a critical moment.

Right at this time, Food Dump poked its head out of the pouch while yelling.

Hearing Food Dump’s cry, the giant bear’s gaze turned extremely heavy. Stretching its front claws out to push away the blocking lady shaman, it tilted its head to look at Food Dump who was hanging in a pouch in front of Donford Wu’s chest.

“Don’t move.”

The lady shaman pulled the Donford Wu that wanted to escape.

“What does it want to do?”

Donford Wu nervously asked.

The lady shaman shook her head, indicating that he shouldn’t speak.

Food Dump didn’t know that danger was descending. It probably smelt the honey’s smell, it yelled while trying to climb out.

The giant bear slowly approached, arriving in front of Donford Wu, it reached out its claws to take hold of the pouch in front of his chest.

Donford Wu didn’t have to heart to see bad luck befall Food Dump, he wanted to escape with it, but the lady shaman probably guessed what he was thinking and grasped his hand, indicating for him not to move.

The giant bear didn’t have claw sheaths, its sharp claws exposed to the outside. The claws had a hook like shape and was longer than twenty centimeters. Seeing such sharp claws reaching out towards Food Dump, Donford Wu greatly felt heartbroken. He secretly used strength to escape from the lady shaman’s hand, he thought back to when Food Dump would climb out of the boulder encirclement and sleep beside him. Food Dump was weak, and he had the responsibility to protect it.

Just when he was comparing strengths with the lady shaman, the giant bear already snatched Food Dump from the pouch, placing it on top of the boulder.

Food Dump didn't shame its name, it completely didn't put the dangerous situation into his mind. Smelling the air, it found the honey, not giving a fuck, it started eating.

When Food Dump was stuffing itself, the giant bear sized it up by one side.

Donford Wu nervously observed the giant bear's gaze. If an animal turns angry, it'll show it in their eyes first. But the giant bear's gaze didn't seem angry, but rather seemed to be nervous and excited just like a human.

"Is your Pi Xiu a male or female?"

The lady shaman asked in a low tone.

"Male, what about it?"

Donford Wu suspiciously looked at the lady shaman, he could feel that the lady shaman was currently shaking.

After Donford Wu finished talking, the lady shaman shook even more, at the same time, she muttered to herself.

"Is it actually its son? Is it actually its son?

"You think they're grandson and grandfather?"

Donford Wu frowned while asking. Bears and pandas were completely different kinds of animals. Food Dump was definitely born of two pandas, it was impossible that it had a black bear father.

"Xi Yin Sa."

The lady shaman changed her pronunciation.

This time Donford Wu understood. The Xia dynasty's language's descendant and successor had very similar pronunciation. What the lady shaman wanted to say was that Food Dump might be the successor of the black bear.

While the two were whispering, the giant bear turned around and walked towards them. Arriving, it didn't say anything and took the copper pole from the lady shaman's hand.

"What exactly is it? What does it want to do?"

Donford Wu hurriedly asked.

"The Bear King is our Gold Clan's last Celestial Master of the White Tiger's mount."

The lady shaman nervously looked at the giant bear and Food Dump.

"What's a Celestial Master of the White Tiger?"

Donford Wu continued to ask.

"It's our Gold clan's Shamans, Magician and Celestial Master's leader, leading the Gold clan with the Gold King."

The lady shaman's mind wasn't with him, all her attention was on Food Dump.

With this sentence, Donford Wu immediately understood. The Xia dynasty was a dynasty with King power and Deity power. The Gold king was like a military leader of an army and the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was like the political commissar of the army, belonging to a mental leader.

"You said it was the last Celestial Master's mount, then what about the other Celestial Masters?"

Donford Wu continued asking in curiosity. Right now, the giant bear was holding the copper pole to stop Food Dump from licking the honey.

"It's Celestial Master of the White Tiger, not Celestial Master, there are a lot of Celestial Masters, but there is only one Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

The lady shaman casually said.

"Where is he now, why is his mount here?"

Donford Wu asked.

"Can you not ask now?"

The lady shaman was abnormally nervous.

"Then can you first release your hand?"

Donford Wu frowned. The lady shaman under the tension, tightly grasped his hand, her finger nails almost digging into his flesh.

The lady shaman finally noticed, quickly releasing her hand. At the same time she quickly said.

“Our Gold clan’s Celestial Master of the White Tiger vanished seventy years ago, after he vanished, the black bear came here to wait for its successor, waiting until now.”

“How does it know its successor would show up here? Was it told by the Celestial Master? Also, how would it know what animal its successor would be? And how can he determine if the animal is its successor or not?”

Donford Wu asked.

“The bear king was bestowed upon the Celestial Master of the White Tiger by the heavens as a mount. They have spirits, allowing them to find and differentiate their successor, no need for the Celestial Master of the White Tiger to tell it.”

The lady shaman patiently replied.

“But the little guy isn’t a bear.”

Donford Wu said.

“Pi Xiu’s are also bears.”

The lady shaman said.

“Then donkeys are also horses.”

Donford Wu laughed.

“Bit it, Bite it.”

The lady shaman cupped her hands, right now, the giant bear was trying to make Food Dump bite the copper pole.

“If it can break a copper pole, then does that mean it’s a bear king?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Normal Pi Xius can’t bite off copper poles.”

The lady shaman nodded her head.

“No need to try, the bear king is it.”

Donford Wu sighed in relief.

The lady shaman doubtfully turned her head, Donford Wu took out the dagger

from his waist, pointing at a missing part on the back of the dagger.

"Look, this was bitten off by it....."

Chapter 15 Spiritual Turtle

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-15/>

Chapter 15 Spiritual Turtle

After the long ordeal, the line of people didn't move far before the sky turned dark. When the sunsets, large quantities of ferocious wild beasts would come out of their caves to hunt. To move at this time was not a good idea. The lady shaman led the crowd to a more open place with fewer trees, deciding to spend the night here.

The mountain had lots of dried out trees, allowing almost unlimited firewood. The bonfire they lit was huge, the people surrounded the bonfire eating their rations. Donford Wu took out his raw meat and started roasting it.

No matter how high the quality of food is, if you eat too much, you would get a stomach ache. Right now, Food Dump had a hurting stomach. Lying down next to Donford Wu, it whined a "Hn" noise. While Donford Wu was roasting the meat, he slowly caressed Food Dump's head to comfort it.

The lady shaman came walking over, passing a sheep skin water pouch over to Donford Wu.

Donford Wu received it. Drinking a few mouthfuls himself, he poured some into his hand to feed it to Food Dump. Emptying his hands several times, Food Dump stopped drinking.

"When will we reach the tribe?"

Donford Wu gave back the water pouch to the lady shaman.

Taking the water pouch, she sat down beside him.

"Another two days."

"How many tribes does the Gold clan have?"

Donford Wu questioned.

"Six, two for mining, two for logging, and the last two for refining metals."

The lady shaman stated.

“Since everyone’s busy, where does the food come from?”

Donford Wu asked.

“The capital and the tribes all have farmland, every month, they’ll give us some rations. We, ourselves have some farmland, which the women take care of.”

The lady shaman stared into the fire, pondering something, “Refining so much metal, is it all to pay tribute to the Earth clan?”

Donford Wu asked yet again. His basic understanding of this period of time came only from Walda Ming. Through the lady shaman, he could understand even more about this period.

“They get ninety percent, the rest is for us to trade for food, cloth, and other things.

“Ninety percent? That’s even more unlucky than Samuel Huang (Huang Shi Ren, a fictional character who loses his business). Are the other three clans ninety percent too?”

The tribute percentage really startled Donford Wu.

The lady shaman shook her head.

“Not that much.”

“What do they give the Earth clan?”

Donford Wu questioned once again.

“The Water clan gives horses and large dogs. The Wood clan contributes salt and sea fish. The Fire clan only gives dyed elephant tusks and rhino horns. Hey, your meat is roasted black.”

The lady shaman pointed at the stick in Donford Wu’s hand.

“Why can the Fire clan pay so little tribute?”

Donford Wu eyed his blacked meat, seeing it charred to such an extent, he threw it away into the fire.

“Because their shamans are really powerful, and they have extremely violent

natures. The Earth clan doesn't dare to bully them."

The lady shaman untied the pouch by her waist and passed it over to Donford Wu.

"I'm not hungry, but thanks."

Donford Wu shook his hands. Right now, he could determine that the lady shaman had interest towards him. When did this start, he didn't know, because the lady shaman hid it deep within her heart. But ever since the lady shaman went between him and the giant beat, she exposed her true emotions. From then on, she didn't try to deliberately evade or hid it.

"Is it because the Gold clan is missing the Celestial Master of the White Tiger that they are bullied so much?"

Donford Wu asked.

"That's the main reason."

The lady shaman nodded her head.

"Then can't the other Celestial Master's replace him?"

Donford Wu pushed aside the Food Dump that was sniffing a rations bag.

"No."

The lady shaman shook her head.

"Why is that?"

Donford Wu asked.

This time, the lady shaman didn't immediately reply, only after hesitating for a long time did she answer.

"Because our Celestial Master of the White Tiger is missing, and our Spiritual Turtle had been killed, the most mysterious and powerful ways of controlling the laws have already been lost."

"You want to ask what a Spiritual Turtle is?"

The lady shaman tilted her head towards Donford Wu.

Donford Wu slightly smiled, agreeing silently. To understand a person not only

needs time, but needs to have experienced things together. Only just a few hours ago did he hate the lady shaman to death.

“To talk about the Spiritual Turtle, we must first talk about my ancestors first. The Gold Deity, Rhys (Ru Shou) was my Gold clan’s ancestor. All the ways of controlling the laws of the Gold clan were created by him, before giving back his control over the laws to the heavens and earth, he passed his ways of law to the first Celestial Master of the White Tiger. Apart from the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, he also passed his ways to a loyal Spiritual Turtle. This Spiritual Turtle has already lived for a long time, it could speak in human language. The reason for its existence is so that just in case the Celestial Master of the White Tiger had an accident and couldn’t pass down the the ways of the law, then we could still learn the ways of the law and cultivation method from it.

Donford Wu silently nodded his head. Saying it crudely, the turtle was insurance. Right now, not only is the Celestial Master of the White Tiger of the Gold clan dead, but also the insurance is dead, the most mysterious and powerful ways of controlling the laws has all but been lost.

“You guys.....”

He originally wanted to ask why the Gold clan ancestor didn’t just use writing to record the ways to control the laws, but just when he wanted to say it, he remembered that the Xia dynasty didn’t have any kind of written language, so everyone right now was illiterate.

“You said that your ancestor gave back his control over the laws to the heavens and earth, what does that mean?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Let me think how I should say it so you can understand.”

The lady shaman stated.

After the conversation stopped, Donford Wu noticed that Food Dump already bit open the lady shaman’s ration pouch, the rice patties inside were almost all eaten by it.

“If you dare ‘Hn’ again, I’ll give you a kick.”

Donford Wu slapped at Food Dump that was ‘Hn’ ing.

Food Dump didn’t even take notice of it. But except for the lady shaman, all the Gold clan clansmen stood up, staring at him with a discontent expression.

The lady shaman waved her hand at the crowd, indicating to them that there was no need to be nerves, following, she opened her mouth to speak.

“Giving back the control over the laws to the heavens and earth means to forever not here, but forever here at the same time.”

“What?”

Hearing this, Donford Wu was in a daze, what’s forever not here, but forever here at the same time? This was like saying he needed to eat to have enough energy to go on a diet.

Seeing that he didn’t understand, the lady shaman didn’t try to keep explaining.

What Donford Wu really wanted to understand was the situation the world was in, skipping this question, he asked a different one.

“Do the other four clans have Spiritual Turtles?”

“They all have long living, way of law passing shamans, but that doesn’t mean they’re Spiritual Turtles.”

The lady shaman said.

“Then who are the ancestors of the other clans?”

Donford Wu asked again.

“The Wood Deity Jum (Ju Mang), the Water Deity Gongo(Gong Gong), the Fire Deity Zur(Zhu Rong), and the Earth Clan ancestor is the Emperor Xuan Yuan(Xuan Yuan).”

The lady shaman popped out the wooden cork and started drinking a few mouthfuls of water.

This action made Donford Wu extremely surprised. He used this water pouch before, two people drinking from the same bottle in modern terms meant a very intimate action, he wasn’t sure what this meant in this period of time, but since

the lady shaman was wearing a mask, he couldn't see her expression. With suspicion in his heart, he turned to look at the Gold clansmen. A few of them were eating something, they weren't looking this way, the remaining had startled expressions on their face, this meant that two people drinking from the same water pouch was a very intimate action.

"Did their ancestors also give their control over the laws back to the heavens and earth?"

Donford Wu keeping his composure asked again.

The lady shaman nodded her head.

"I once saw a long time before a human shaped flame flying in the air, inside the flames seemed to be a person."

Donford Wu was a bit hungry, he picked up a rice patty and started gnawing on it.

"That's the Fire clan's Fury Blaze Dance."

The lady shaman stated.

"Is it the most powerful way of controlling the laws of the Fire clan?"

Donford Wu casually asked.

"Not really, all the Fire clan's Celestial Masters can use it, it's a kind of bodily technique."

The lady shaman said.

"Does the Gold clan have any ways to control the laws to fly?"

Donford Wu asked again.

"There is, our Gold clan has the Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds."

The lady shaman nodded her head, not waiting for Donford Wu to ask again.

"The Water clan has the Weak Water Dragon's Twirl, the Wood clan has the Bottomless Upward Spreader, and the Earth clan's Returning To The Heavens And Earth are all bodily techniques that can rise into the air."

"Keep going, keep going, but please more detail, I have seen the Fury Blaze Dance before, so start from the Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds."

Donford Wu was greatly interested in this.

"The Gold clan Celestial Masters can control metals to fly through the air, when moving at quick speeds, thunder would sound, so that's why it's called the Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds.

The Water clan Celestial Masters can shift and drive the waters of rivers, lakes and oceans to form a rapid swirling water column to rise into the air. Because the water column's shape looks very similar to a tornado, that's why it is called the Weak Water Dragon's Twirl.

The Wood clan Celestial Masters can make the grass and trees around them to quickly grow, rising them into the air. Upwards Spreader is a name of a deity tree to their east side, it can grow really high. So that's why this kind of way of controlling the laws is called the Bottomless Upwards Spreader.

The Earth clan Celestial Masters don't need anything to go into the skies and escape from the earth. This kind of way of controlling the laws is called by them Returning To The Heavens And Earth."

The lady shaman carefully explained all of them one at a time.

"The Earth clan's way of controlling the laws seems to be a lot more powerful than the other four clans.

Donford bite into a rice patty.

"The Earth clan is the descendent of Emperor Xuan Yuan, the Emperor passed down a lot more ways of the law than our four clans."

The lady shaman stated.

"When can you become a Celestial Master?"

Donford Wu gave the ration pouch that Food Dump bit open back to the lady shaman.

"Shaman's have three ranks, their subdivisions have nine grades, to me,

Celestial Master is too far away.”

The lady shaman tied the empty ration pouch back to her waist.

“I only ate one, the rest was eaten by it.”

Donford Wu laughed while he pointed at the already sleeping Food Dump.

“No problem.”

The lady shaman’s eyes slightly closed, without asking, she was smiling.

“That’s right, how did these names come to be?”

Donford Wu added more firewood to the bonfire. Everyone was laying down resting right now, only the two of them were still talking.

“The name Shaman has been pasted down since ancient times. Sages means a shaman that has high understanding in the laws. The name Celestial Master was what the Emperor called his master Qibo.”

The lady shaman stated.

“Won’t you get tired of wearing a mask all day?”

Donford Wu sneezed.

“All shamans of the female gender must wear masks before marrying.”

The lady shaman said.

“You’re always wearing a mask, how would they know how you look? If they don’t know how you look, who would marry you?”

Donford Wu looked around to find a place to lay down.

“Marrying is seen on proper conduct, morality and virtue, what does that have to do with looks?”

The lady shaman squinted her eyes, this time surely wasn’t a smile, but should be a frown.

“Okay, Okay, Okay, you’re right, it’s late, time to sleep.”

Donford Wu said.

“You asked me all these questions tonight, and I answered all of them, right

now, I have one question for you.”

The lady shaman said.

“Go to sleep, we’ll talk tomorrow.”

Donford Wu said.

“It’s only one question, we can sleep after it.”

The lady shaman said.

“Don’t tell me you want to ask where I come from?”

Donford Wu titled his head towards the lady shaman.

The lady shaman nodded her head.

Donford Wu covered his face and sighed, it’s over, he shouldn’t think about sleeping tonight.....

Chapter 14 The Change of a Bear King

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-14/>

Chapter 14 The Change of a Bear King

“Your’s is made out of crude metal.”

The lady shaman shook her head.

“Mine is made of extremely hard special steel.”

Donford Wu helplessly shook his head. Compared to modern people, Xia dynasty’s people didn’t have such accurate names and classifications of metals. To be able to be made into weapons are called beautiful metals, referring as better metals. To only be melted into farming tools are called crude metals, referring to low hardness or not beautiful enough metals.

The lady shaman didn’t know what Donford Wu was saying, because he talked in a modern language, and the reason why he used modern language is because they wouldn’t be able to understand what is steel anyways.

Food Dump kept dodging the copper pole and continued to like the honey from the depression in the boulder. Every time the giant bear tried but got no results didn’t become irritated, it just kept holding the copper pole and kept on trying. It was hard to guess that such a violent and large animal could be so patient.

“Why isn’t it biting?”

The lady shaman doubtfully looking at Donford Wu.

“How should I know?”

Donford Wu shook his head. He hadn’t spent too much time with Food Dump, so he wasn’t very clear of its temper, only knowing that Food Dump could eat really well and had a rather good temper.

“Its appetite is huge.”

Looking at Food Dump, the lady shaman was surprised. The giant bear didn’t

lick much of the pot of honey, everything that was left was all finished off by Food Dump.

"It wouldn't leave another pot of honey unfinished if you gave another one to it."

Donford Wu laughed.

After finishing the honey, Food Dump didn't stay there for long, it turned around and lumbered towards Donford Wu.

Seeing Food Dump wanting to leave, the giant bear reached out the copper pole to block its path. Food Dump went around the obstacle and continued forward.

The giant bear blocked again, Food Dump continued to go around.

The giant bear kept on blocking Food Dump from leaving, making Food Dump growl out a bothersome "N, N". It tried going forward, backwards, left and right to go around.

"How can we make it mad?"

The giant bear wasn't in a hurry, but the lady shaman was.

"I don't know, I haven't seen it become angry before."

Donford Wu shrugged and opened his hands.

"Seeing that it couldn't go around, Food Dump knelt down and sat.

The lady shaman furrowed her brows, all the Bear Kings before were all ferocious and proud courageous warriors. But now looking at this Pi Xiu, it was clear it didn't have the courageous spirit.

The giant bear's gaze also let out a doubtful expression. It also probably hadn't encountered this kind of situation before.

Not willing to give up, the Bear King once again stretched out the copper pole towards Food Dump. Now that Food Dump was full, it started to hug the copper pole to play around since it was bored. The part that was towards Food Dump was the top, Food Dump clearly had interest in the Ox head. It was like a human baby, biting was its nature, with a "Ka Cha" sound, it bite down on one of the Ox horns. Chewing and swallowing it, it started to gnaw at the other horn.

"I wasn't wrong."

Donford Wu twisted his head towards the lady shaman. From the mask, he could see that the lady shaman had her eyes wide open.

The giant bear was abnormally excited right now, its breath becoming extremely heavy. But testing until now, there still wasn't any clear results. Following this, it reached out its two front claws to pull back the copper pole, but since Food Dump just started taking a liking to playing with the copper pole, it didn't want to let go, using its two front claws, it swiped on the copper pole.

Different to the lady shaman's extreme nervousness, Donofrd Wu was very relaxed, because he knew how sharp Food Dump claws were.

Seeing its toy being taken away, Food Dump was in a hurry, its right claw swiping down madly, it broke the copper pole in half, raising its head at the giant bear, Food Dump showed a prideful face, showing its bad panda thinking.

'I already broke it, so even if you need it, you can't use it anymore.'

Seeing that Food Dump broke the copper pole, the giant bear lifted its front limbs and raised its head to roar. In the roar was mixed in incomparable happiness. Another roar came out, except for happiness in these roars, they also had strong sadness in them. Donford Wu didn't know if it was because of all these painful years waiting or because it missed its missing master.

This roar scared Food Dump, frightened, it quickly ran towards Donford Wu. Donford Wu reached out his hands and picked it up. The two roars of the giant bear numbed his brain, causing him to become dizzy.

Who would've guessed that after the two cries, the giant bear still didn't stop, once again shouting out a third roar. This roar was much louder than the last two, it also lasted longer. At the same time this roar came out, large amounts of silver scales sprouted out of the giant bear's body. These scales were about the size of palms, shining in a silver azure color. After coming out, they closely stuck to the fur, covering its whole body except for the eyes.

This mutation of the giant made greatly surprised Donford Wu, twisting his head to look at the lady shaman by his side, he only saw that in the lady shaman's eyes didn't have any surprise in them, only respect and esteem from

deep within her heart.

After sprouting out the silver scales, the giant bear's front limbs pounded towards the ground, from the boulder, it slowly lumbered towards the top of the boulder, the silver azure armor over it clacking at the same time.

This time, Donford Wu didn't ask the lady shaman how the giant bear could have such a strange transformation, right now, he wanted to know what the giant bear was going to do.

Going up and down the boulder twice, its hind limbs using power, jumped off. With just one jump, it was more than ten meters away from the ground. After going up in the air, such a huge and heavy body didn't fall back onto the ground, but galloped again and again, straight into the sky.

"It's going to leave?"

Donfod Wu turned his towards the lady shaman who was looking up towards the sky.

The lady shaman shook her head.

When Donford Wu placed his gaze back onto the sky, the giant bear was already more than a hundred meters from the sky, the silver azure armor reflecting the sun's ray into glaring cold lights, making people unable to directly stare at it.

The giant bear stopped high in the sky, following west, north, east, south, it roared four times, these roars were real roars, each roar shook the ground, making hundreds of beasts cower, and thousands of birds to scatter.

Even with such a distance, Donford Wu still couldn't stand straight from the extremely powerful roar, quickly holding on a boulder to the north side.

After the roars stopped, the giant bear quickly descended, a huge boulder shattering when it landed with power.

After splitting the earth with its descent, the giant bear stared at Food Dump in Donford Wu's embrace for a long time. The azure silver armor slowly fading, until it completely vanished.

After the armor vanished, the giant bear's stomach started to violently stir.

Seeing this, the lady shaman once again knelt down.

“What is it doing?”

Donford Wu asked, the giant bear right now seems extremely sick and wanted to throw up, he was facing directly at the giant bear, so he didn’t know if he should hide or not.

Just when he finished speaking, the giant bear really did throw up, but it didn’t throw up food wastes, but a purple colored orb the size of a chicken egg.

Seeing the orb, Donford Wu was immediately shocked. This orb should be the result of the giant bear’s cultivation, its inner Dan, which also meant it was all of its essence. The reason why it spat the inner Dan out should be to give it to its successor.

Just as he thought, the giant bear used its left front limb to catch the inner Dan it spat out, slowly passing it to the lady shaman.

Using both her hands to receive it, she slowly stood up.

Spitting out the inner Dan, the giant bear’s eye turned extremely murky, the black fur on its body instantly becoming a snowy white, the strong and mighty aura no longer there. Replacing that was an old and retired dragon that couldn’t even breathe fire anymore.

After giving the inner Dan to the lady shaman, the giant bear didn’t retract its front limb, but reaching out towards Donford Wu’s chest, it used the palm of its paws to lightly touch Food Dump’s head, this action was extremely similar to a grandparent caressing their grandchildren.

Being frightened from its previous roar, Food Dump curled into Donford Wu’s arms and didn’t turn to look.

After a short while of caressing, the giant bear turned around and walked deep into the forest, its speed slow, while walking, it kept turning back its head.

“You should at least say thank you.”

Donford Wu held Food Dump’s front paws and waved at the giant bear.

“Courageous Bear King, the warrior that has experienced a hundred battles,

the clan members of the Gold clan will never forget you and the Celestial Master of the White Tiger's help and protection, may your spirit forever be at rest."

The lady shaman muttered.

"Why don't you guys take care of it?"

Donford Wu asked. The actions of the giant bear made him think back to a soldier retiring, after a last show of his might, giving advice to the next batch of soldiers, he would then hand over his firearm and his rank.

"The Bear King is a true warrior, it doesn't need anyone's pity, and it also doesn't hope to let people see the weak side of itself."

The lady shaman shook her head.

"What will happen to it now that it doesn't have a inner Dan?"

Donford Wu looked at the slowly departing giant bear.

"After losing its inner Dan, it will not be able to use the protecting deity armor."

The lady shaman said in a low tone.

"Will it die?"

Donford Wu asked again.

"It will find a secluded place to end itself."

The lady shaman carefully placed the purple inner Dan into one of her pockets.

"Why does it kill itself?"

Donford Wu asked, confused.

"For the dignity of a Bear King, and so that it can grow up quickly, if the old Bear King doesn't die, the new Bear King won't be able to acquire the god of heaven's blessing."

The lady shaman pointed at Food Dump while talking.

Donford Wu's first reaction was that this kind of saying was too superstitious and had a lack of scientific evidence. But thinking back to what he just saw, that kind of strange situation also didn't have any scientific basis he could think of.

At this time, the giant bear already entered deep within the forest, the lady shaman picking up the broken copper pole on the boulder, reached out her hand towards Donford Wu.

“Give me the Bear King.”

“Why should I give it to you, I took care of Food Dump.”

Donford Wu also reached out his hand.

“That inner Dan was given to Food Dump by the black bear, why did you store it away?”

“The Bear King is the Celestial Master of the White Tiger’s mount, it is extremely important to our Gold clan.”

The lady shaman said with a serious face.

“I discovered Food Dump, and I took care of it, you want to take it away from me?”

Donford Wu didn’t show any signs of stepping down.

The lady shaman stared directly at Donford Wu, after a few seconds, she retracted her hand.

“Fine, you can hold it for now.”

Seeing that she took a step back, Donford Wu could only also take a step back, taking back his hand, he didn’t ask for the inner Dan again.

The scene from before scarred the following villagers, even though they knew the Bear King wouldn’t hurt them, but they were still scarred. After waiting for them to recover, they once again set off in a single file line. The Earth clan lady shaman also didn’t try to escape from the mess, after starving for such a long period of time, don’t talk about being bound, even if she wasn’t tied up, she wouldn’t be able to move.

“Now that the Bear King has emerged, does that mean the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is still alive?”

Donford Wu walked beside the lady shaman. Even though the lady shaman was always harsh towards him, but from the actions of when she stood between him

and the giant bear, she didn't seem as cold and disgusting, this fellow should be an outside cold, inside warm type of person

"The appearance of the Bear King also means the appearance of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, but most of our children that were born this year were all mascaraed."

The lady shaman took a glance at the woman holding the child, turning back she continued.

"The reason why we are going to the tribe is not only to send the captive, but to also invite a Celestial Master to exam if the child that luckily survive has a Gold veins."

"What are Gold veins?"

Donford Wu curiously asked.

"Gold veins means they have pure Gold blood, the foundation of cultivating Gold clan's control over the laws."

The lady shaman didn't hide anything from Donford Wu now.

"All the Gold clan shamans have pure Gold blood?"

Donford Wu continued to ask.

"Yes."

The lady shaman nodded.

"What does pure Gold blood mean?"

Donford Wu got more curious the more he asked.

"Pure Gold clan lineage."

The lady shaman stated.

"If they marry someone outside the clan, does their blood change?"

Donford Wu asked again.

"Yes, their descents will forever be unable to cultivate the laws."

The lady shaman told Donford Wu.

Hearing this, Donford Wu bit his lips, he originally wanted to ask the lady shaman a favor so that when the Celestial Master tested the child, he wanted to also be tested. But now, there didn't seem to be any meaning in testing, after four thousand years, almost two hundred centuries, his blood would be so mixed, it couldn't be mixed anymore.....

Chapter 16 Mia Si

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-16/>

Chapter 19 Mia Si

After sighing out, Donford Wu turned his head to look at the lady shaman, only seeing that she was without distraction, looking at him.

“Let me think how I should say it so you can understand.”

Donford Wu borrowed the lady shaman’s words.

“You aren’t any member of our five clans, you don’t understand anything about our world, and you even don’t know our language, where exactly did you come from?”

The lady shaman suspiciously asked.

Donford Wu was currently furrowing his eyebrows furiously while thinking, hearing the lady shaman speak, he turned his head to look directly into her eyes. After a tens of seconds, he slowly said.

“I come from four thousand years in the future.”

“You’re a person from four thousand years later?”

The lady shaman didn’t show any surprise, she only asked to confirm it.

“Yes, I’m not from here.”

Donford Wu nodded his head.

“Then how did you come here?”

The lady shaman made a counter clockwise gesture in the air.

“We have a tool that can send people back in time.”

Donford Wu stated, for the lady shaman to believe he was a person from four thousand years in the future was already extremely hard enough, he didn’t hope because of a completely unrelated matter to confuse the lady shaman. Because when he crossed to space in time, it was a passive crossing, he couldn’t explain these kinds of things himself.

The lady shaman nodded her head continually, changing the topic, she asked.

“Then do you still have any companions?”

“No, it’s only me.”

Donford Wu said. Before he told the truth, he was already prepared for the lady shaman to take him as a mental patient, but who would’ve thought that the lady shaman would actually trust him, this made him accidentally touched.

“Then why don’t you go back to your time?”

The lady shaman once again did a gesture in the air but clockwise.

Donford Wu shook his head, active crossing could allow him to go any time he wanted in theory, but passive crossing couldn’t, he couldn’t cross when he wanted to cross.

“So you came back in time on your own, forever unable to go back, is that it?”

The lady shaman asked.

Donford Wu nodded.

“You have no relatives or friends, forever unable to go back home, after encountering such a horrible situation, how can you still be so happy?”

The lady shaman slowed down her pace.

“Happy your ass, if you were me, would you be happy?”

Donford Wu bit his lip while saying this.

“But you don’t seem sad.”

The lady shaman said in a gentle tone.

“Even if I’m said, I can’t just sit around all day and cry, I do have to live on.”

Donford Wu’s mood went down to the extreme.

“You’re too brave.”

The lady shaman looked at Donford Wu with admirable eyes.

Donford Wu waved his hand, not speaking.

“What kind of person are you four thousand years later?”

The lady shaman curiously asked, first it was Donford Wu that was curious and kept on asking questions, now it was the other way around.

“A soldier.”

Donford Wu felt depressed and couldn’t dispel it on his own. Taking at the box of cigs from his body armor, he took at a cig and lit it, these three cigs he couldn’t bear to smoke.

“Can I look at your fire twister?”

The lady shaman pointed at the lighter in Donford Wu’s hand.

Donford Wu casually passed the lighter over to her, the lady shaman copied his movements and lit a fire, looking at the flames of the lighter with uncertainty.

“It’s almost out of gas, don’t waste it.”

Donford Wu took back his lighter and tucked it away in his pocket. He always used a normal plastic lighter, he also had a ZIPPO one, but he normally didn’t use it, that little toy was only for decoration and looking cool, it needed more gas every two or three days.

“This is a thing from four thousand years in the future?”

The lady shaman asked.

“Yes.”

Donford Wu stood up, looking for dry branches, he started making a bed. The area where the Gold clan is, is extremely humid and wet, the Gold clansmen are all used to the humidity, so they can casually just lay down, but he couldn’t.

“When you’re free, can you tell me more about four thousand years in the future?”

Donford Wu casually replied with a grunt. He didn’t just want to keep on remembering the modern times, because every time he did, he felt homesick and depressed.

“You shouldn’t tell my situation to other people.”

Throwing away the used up cig, he laid down.

"Why?"

The lady shaman questioned.

"If other people know this, they'll treat me as a freak, or they'll pity me, I don't want these kinds of things."

Donford Wu stated.

"Then why did you tell me?"

The lady shaman asked.

"Why did you step between me and the giant bear?"

Donford Wu asked back.

The lady shaman lowered head not talking, Donford Wu knew that the lady shaman had no way of answering this question, after asking it, he closed his eyes.

The next day in the morning, the crowd once again set off in a single file line. The lady shaman didn't continue to ask about what they talked about yesterday night, and she didn't walk with him, but led in the front of the crowd.

Two thirty in the afternoon, another batch of Gold clansmen chased up from behind, the person leading was a male shaman, an average looking face, a bit to the chubby side, round face, no beard, his age was about the same as the lady shaman. He was bringing a lot of people, around twenty, in his crow was a woman carrying a baby.

The male shaman recognized the lady shaman, after he arrived, he immediately greeted the lady shaman enthusiastically, the latter not warm nor cold greeting him back.

Knowing that the woman being carried was an Earth clan assassin shaman, the villagers that came after hit and kicked at her one at a time. This time not waiting for Donford Wu to rush up and stop them, the lady shaman restrained the crowd from excesses actions.

The male shaman seemed to have slight interest in the lady shaman, on the road, he never left her side like a shadow, giving her water pouches and fruits, he

tried everything to be nice.

Donford Wu still followed them far away, the males of the village kept looking back routinely that made the male shaman feel strange, questioning the lady shaman, the lady shaman might've not told the whole truth. Because of this, he didn't know Donford Wu's identity, and that he was currently holding the Celestial Master of the White Tiger's mount in his embrace.

In the middle of their journey, Donford Wu suddenly saw a large beehive at a tree next to the road. Seeing the beehive, he stopped, pretending he had to release himself, he waited for the crowd to walk further away. He quickly used an arrow to shoot down the beehive, because he was rather far away, the bees didn't discover him.

Donford Wu wrapped up the beehive, then hid it at his chest.

Walking for another twenty something kilometers, the sky dimmed down. The crowd walked while finding a good place to camp.

After the sky turned dark, the single file line found a place with fewer trees at the waist of the mountain. Everyone went to find firewood to light into a bonfire, the people who came after went north, and the lady shaman's villagers went south. Donford Wu picked a place south west of the Earth clan lady shaman's bamboo rack not too far away, then sat down.

The male shaman tried again to hit on the lady shaman, the lady shaman didn't like it and rather felt annoyed, laying down to rest early on.

Donford Wu waited only till it was after ten, then he started to roast a piece of meat. All the meat he brought as rations was cured, so first of all, it wasn't easy for it to turn bad, and second of all, it had a bit of flavor to it.

Food Dump was already hungry early on. It eyed the meat in the fire by one side. It was a bit afraid of fire, not daring to get too close.

Now that the meat was cooked, Donford Wu used his dagger to cut it in half and threw it at Food Dump, using a water bag to cool the other half down, he took the meat and walked towards the bamboo rack.

These few days, he always gave some water to the captive, the villagers were all use to it, so they didn't take notice when he walked over to the bamboo rack.

“Eat some.”

Donford Wu stretched his hand over to the Earth clan lady shaman’s mouth with the meat in his hand. She was tightly bound to the bamboo rack, seven or eight animal muscles tied her to it. Her arms also bound, she had no way to eat herself.

The Earth clan lady shaman being bound there for so many days, had no strength left earlier on. She didn’t open her mouth, only slowly titling her head to one side.

“If you don’t eat anything, even after loosing the strings, you won’t even have the strength to escape.”

Donford Wu said in a low voice.

The Earth clan lady turned her head back around, doubtfully looking at Donford Wu, Donford Wu nodded at her, the latter understanding, she took a big bite out of the meat. After being cooled down by Donford Wu, it wasn’t too hot anymore, so she finished it off quickly.

When she was eating, Donford Wu took out the beehive at his chest. He then smeared some honey on the animal muscles that bound her.

Waiting until the lady shaman finished eating the meat, Donford Wu fed her some water.

“I’m called Mia Si (Si Miao), what about you?”

The Earth clan lady shaman asked in a low voice.

“If you’re called temple (temple in Chinese is also sounds like Si Miao), then I could only be called a monk.”

Turning away, he went back to his original position.

Food Dump couldn’t eat the meat right now, it was too hot. Food Dump was now using his claws to poke at it.

Donford Wu threw the beehive into the fire, looking around him, he observed the people at the south and north side. It was quickly closing into eleven in the night, almost everyone was laying down sleeping. Only the male shaman was

training his control over the laws. Shaman training was similar to how modern people did it, closing his eyes, sitting criss-crossed.

After another while, the male shaman also laid down. Not long after he laid down, Food Dump also finished eating his piece of meat.

Food Dump didn't eat a lot today, saying it correctly, Donford Wu didn't feed him a lot. After finishing the meat, it wasn't full, going around Donford Wu humming, he looked for more food. Donford Wu hugged the pouch he carried Food Dump in, pretending to sleep not caring about it.

Pandas were all short sighted, Food Dump was too. They mostly looked for food from smell. Donford Wu didn't have any food on him. Food Dump started thinking, crinkling its nose, it sniffed. Wiggling its butt, it walked off towards the bamboo rack.

At first, it was only licking, after the sweet taste turned pale, it started to gnaw and scratch. After this tussle, the animal muscles were one by one broken by the scratches and bites. The Earth clan lady shaman flipping around, crawled into the forest.

Donford Wu slept at ease. The reason why he released the Earth clan lady shaman was for two reasons. One, was that the Earth clan was extremely mighty. Even if the Gold clan knew that it was the Earth clan that killed their children, they couldn't do anything to them. If the Earth clan didn't speak, then it would still be good, but if she said in front of everyone. 'Yes, the Earth clan killed your children', then the upper echelons of the Gold clan couldn't pretend to not know about it, the perpetrator determined, they couldn't not send out soldiers to face their people. To send out soldiers meant to go looking for their deaths, why not just release the witness and save some face for the Gold clan's upper echelon.

The second reason was much simpler. This Earth clan lady not only grew to be beautiful but was also polite.

In the middle of the night, some villagers that went to take a piss found out the captive escaped, immediately hollering to wake people up. Everyone woke up and started searching. At this time, the Earth clan lady shaman was long gone.

Not being unable to find the captive, they started to search for who released

her. Donford Wu was the number one suspect, but very quickly, from the scratches and bites on the string muscles, it wasn't hard to find the true perpetrator, but they couldn't do anything. The Food Dump now wasn't the Food Dump two days ago.

But the other villagers that came after found out the identity of Food Dump, ogling and surrounding Food Dump, they payed respect to it. Food Dump didn't know it was used, but right now was using the people beside him, enjoying all the fruits the villagers stuffed at him.....

Chapter 17 Yaara Ming

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-17/>

Chapter 17 Yaara Ming

Everyone's main mission was to transport the babies to the tribe so that they can be tested by the Celestial Master. Transporting the captive was only secondary. But after escaping, the captive might tell about them, so for safety's sake, before the sky brightened, they hurriedly walked on in a single file line.

Knowing that Food Dump was the next Celestial Master of the White Tiger's mount, the male shaman started questioning the lady shaman about the person carrying it. The lady shaman didn't answer directly. He then went to ask the other villagers, thus, they could only tell him that Donford Wu wasn't part of their village, and that he appeared near their village recently.

Hearing this, the male shaman immediately went against this. The Bear King was extremely important to the Gold clan, how could they let an unknown and outside person take care of it. If that person killed the Bear King, then after the Celestial Master of the White Tiger grew up, what would they mount?

"He discovered the Bear King, and he also brought him, he won't hurt the Bear King."

The lady shaman stated.

"Still no, he isn't a Gold clansmen, we can't let him take care of the Bear King. Yesterday night, the captive miraculously escaped, who knows if he tricked the Bear King into breaking the rope."

The male shaman shook his head again and again.

"Then who'll take care of it?"

"Me."

The male shaman stopped, waiting by the side of the road for Donford Wu to come by.

The lady shaman continued on, not stopping with him.

After waiting for Donford Wu to get close, he walked in the middle of the road to stop him.

“Was it you who discovered the Bear King?”

Donford Wu raised his head to take a look at him, with a large step forward, he bumped away the male shaman and continued walking.

The male shaman didn’t think that Donford Wu would dare do such provoking actions. Blanking standing there for a few seconds, his mind came back to him, quickly running to catch up to Donford Wu, he grasped his shoulder to stop him.

“I’m talking to you, can you hear me?”

“I can.”

Donford Wu said.

“Then why aren’t you replying?”

The male shaman didn’t grow a mustache, so he couldn’t flair it, he could only stare.

“I don’t want to.”

Donford Wu turned back around and continued walking forward.

“Do you know who you’re talking with?”

The male shaman once again chased and stopped Donford Wu.

“Who?”

Donford Wu asked.

The male shaman was once again in a daze. No matter what clan the shaman was from, they were all extremely respected, a normal clansmen wouldn’t even dare to bump into them.

Donford Wu turned around and walked once again, when he was walking, he secretly decided something. If that fellow dared to pull on his shoulder one more time, he’ll immediately put him down. Even though Donford Wu didn’t know how to control the laws, but he wasn’t afraid of the male shaman.

Being humiliated and bumped into, the male shaman naturally wouldn’t just

let things go. In a flash, he once again pulled on Donford Wu. Donford Wu pulled out his dagger while quickly turning around. Just when he wanted to force his dagger horizontally onto the male shaman's throat, the male shaman already jumped backed with a scream.

The crowd walking in the front hearing the scream stopped. The lady shaman ran to the back from the front, discovering the male shaman's right hand covered in blood, boring his eyes into Donford Wu. Meaning that he really wanted to go.

Donford Wu used his dagger and pointed at Food Dump who was in his embrace. Just then, Food Dump stole his place and clawed at the male shaman.

The lady shaman turned to look at the male shaman, discovering that the wound on the back of his hand really wasn't made by a dagger. Turning back around, she said.

"The Bear King only follows him. You shouldn't try to take it." The lady shaman's word directly stopped the situation. The male shaman wanted to take the Bear King, thus he was clawed by the Bear King.

Putting back his dagger, he carried Food Dump and continued walking. The male shaman didn't follow, without asking, he was treating his wound.

The villagers of the male shaman all ran back. The lady shaman led her own villagers to continue forward, not waiting for them.

"Did you let the Bear King attack him?"

The lady shaman asked in a low voice.

"How can I tell him what to do?"

Donford Wu continuously shook his head. Just then, the reason why Food Dump attacked was very simple. When the male shaman pulled on him, he woke up Food Dump who was sleeping at the same time. Food Dump needs to sleep for a very long time every day. If it was woken in the middle of it, he would become extremely irritated. Saying it simply, it had a very serious problem with waking up.

"You sure it wasn't really you who let it do that?"

The lady shaman asked.

“Stop with this thing, I didn’t release the captive.”

Donford Wu said while biting his lip. If he admitted that he could command Food Dump, then that meant he had to take responsibility for what Food Dump did last night.

“You’re the first male who saw how she looked like, she’ll definitely come find you in the future.”

The lady shaman stated.

“For what?”

Donford Wu asked.

“To marry you or to kill you.”

The lady shaman tilted her head to look at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu shrugged his shoulders, not continuing on. He already guessed long ago what the consequence was for looking at the lady shaman’s face.

“Lady shamans normally won’t marry a normal mixed blood, but since you were good to her, she probably won’t kill you. There is a way to determine what she is going to do.”

The lady shaman said.

“How?”

Donford Wu inquired.

“If she likes you, she would tell you her name. Before she left, did, did she tell you her name?”

The lady shaman casually said.

“Nope.”

Donford Wu denied while shaking his head.

Just when he finished speaking, the lady shaman’s eyes suddenly turned cold.

Seeing this, Donford Wu immediately knew that he was caught. Without knowing, he was baited into her words.

“I don’t even know when she left, how would I know her name?”

Donford Wu tried to save himself.

But there wasn’t any use. Even though it was understandable of what he was saying, but China’s language from ancient times to now wasn’t the only thing you could read, his tone already betrayed him.

“What’s her name?”

The lady shaman asked.

Donford Wu didn’t immediately answer, the reason why the lady shaman asked him was to give him an opportunity to let him tell the truth. Right now, he was pondering if he should take this opportunity.

“What’s your name?”

Donford Wu spoke out with a question back at her.

After a moment of hesitation, the lady shaman spoke out.

“I’m called Yaara Ming (Ming Yue).”

The lady shaman didn’t say this in a suppressed voice, the villagers following them could all hear it. All of them turned their heads to look at Donford Wu, clear envy showing in their faces.

Donford Wu originally wanted to give her a difficult question, but who would’ve thought that the lady shaman would actually just say it out right. This sentence ‘I’m called Yaara Ming’ and ‘I like you’ didn’t have any difference. Coming to this, it was his turn to be in a mess.

“I released her.”

Donford Wu said in a low voice.

Walda Ming didn’t seem to care about this. In a casual tone, she asked again.

“So, did she tell you her name?”

“What’s the difference between telling and not telling me?”

Donford Wu carefully tested the waters.

“If she didn’t tell you her name, then we have to immediately be prepared for

her, because she'll be coming to kill you."

Yaara Ming stated.

After just being caught into her word trap, Donford Wu was extremely careful, he was afraid he was going to be caught in another one.

Yaara Ming already could guess that the Earth clan shaman told her name to him before she left from Donford Wu's expression, but she didn't continue asking about this matter. Following up, she started another topic.

"Does the Bear King understand you?"

"It only understands one thing."

Donford Wu laughed. Since she didn't continue asking about that matter, it lifted a heavy weight off of his shoulders.

"This is very important."

Yaara Ming said in a serious tone.

"It hasn't been half a month since I picked it up."

Donford Wu shook his head.

"What happened last night, and what happened with him?"

Yaara Ming pointed to the back.

"Last night, I smeared some honey on the string, and today, he disturbed Food Dump's sleep."

Donford Wu said.

"What does Food Dump mean, why did you give it such a name?"

The two words, Food and Dump came out naturally from Yaara Ming's mouth, no different from a person speaking Pu Tong Hua all his life.

"Mighty, fierce, invincible."

Donford Wu laughed.

Yaara Ming was very satisfied with Donford Wu's explanation, this name could match their respected Bear King.

After walking for another half a day, a large path appeared on the mountain, more people showed up with it. At the start, they went pass peddlers who were carrying large baskets. There were normally three to five people in a group. Inside the baskets were lot of different things, there was cloth and salt, there was also beast skin and herbs, and there was feathers and different kind of decorations made out of rocks and bones.

Getting on the large path meant they weren't far from the tribe. On the road, the crow hurried forward. By sunset, the single file line reached the flat piece of land were the tribe was. In the middle of the flat piece of land was a rather large city. Comparing it with their village, the city wasn't actually that big. Compared with modern country side towns, this was much smaller. This city had very high walls, made with over laying rocks. Using only the eyes, it was around six or seven meters tall. Surrounding the walls was two to three hundred acres of land, the land was used to grow corn and millet.

The sun was about to completely go down the mountain, there wasn't anyone left on the road and lands, the crowd followed the large road towards the city.

Because the mountain had a lot of wild beasts, the city gates would close when night fell. When the crowd arrived, they saw that the gates were about to close, these few men were extremely buff, they should be soldiers, but they didn't wear any uniforms, what they wore was linen shirts and pants, their chests imprinted with a small sword.

Even though Yaara Ming didn't like the male shaman, but she still told the soldiers that they were at the back, letting the soldiers close the gates latter.

The soldiers all respected shamans, so they listened the Yaara Ming. Stopping the gates, they waited for the people behind come. Yaara Ming brought Donford Wu and the others into the city first.

After entering the city, Donford Wu felt extremely disappointed. He originally thought that the city would be a place where stalls were all over, crowds going places, a busy and lively view. But who would've thought that even though the city walls were so high and large, the insides was very old and shabby. There was pan-green or pan-yellow ores all over the place, the houses were all short wooden houses, a little better than the slums. It seemed like a city that was

about to be taken down.

“Where will we be living tonight?”

Donford Wu looked at his surroundings into the shabby little city.

“We’ll borrow a place to live.”

Yaara Ming untied a cloth pouch from her waist, taking out some shells, she gave two to every male. After receiving the shells, they laughed while going east.

“How would we find them when we’re leaving?”

Donford Wu took the remaining shell in Yaara Ming’s hand to take a closer look. He heard from Walda Ming that the currency of the Xia dynasty was shells, but this was the first time he saw this thing. The shell was about the size of a dumpling, the outer appearance was like that of an unclosed dumpling. In the middle was a small hole, this hole was punched afterwards, so that shells could be strung together.

Yaara Ming took out a bamboo whistle from her chest, showing it to Donford Wu to take a look, she placed it back where it was.

“What can this kind of shell trade for?”

Donford Wu and the baby carrying women followed Yaara Ming towards the north side.

“One shell can be changed for a pot of salt.”

Yaara Ming casually stated.

Donford Wu nodded his head. At this period of time, transactions were split into buying and selling, and trading. Because not a lot of people have these shells, there was a lot less buying and selling, and more trading.

When they were walking, Donford Wu also discovered something interesting. Inside the city was a tiny amount of shops. All the shops had signs, but they didn’t have any characters, rather the signs had pictures drawn onto them. If they had fish, there was a fish, if they had cloth, there was a cloth, if they had salt, there was two pots of salt, if they had grains, there would be a pile of

rations. Even though the drawings were a bit crude, but he could see what they had right away.

Not walking for long, a mask wearing lady shaman came running from the north. Even though they were both wearing masks, but they could recognize each other at a glance. That lady shaman could be a friend of Yaara Ming. She spoke very intimately with her.

The pace they talked at was very quick, Donford Wu couldn't understand all of it. This lady shaman seemed to also be escorting a surviving baby to be tested by the Celestial Master.

After a short conversation, the lady shaman continued southward.

"So how many children are still alive?"

Donford Wu asked.

"Only three."

Yaara Ming breathed out.

"The Celestial Master would be coming tomorrow from the capital to test them....."

Chapter 18 Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-18/>

Chapter 18 Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds

“Does the whole clan only have three, or is it just this tribe that has three?”

Donford Wu asked.

Yaara Ming opened up the swaddle to take a look at the baby.

“The whole clan only has three surviving babies, all of them are here in this tribe.”

“How is it such a coincidence?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Well, our tribe is the farthest away, and all the people from the Earth clan were in a hurry, so they didn’t have a chance to double check.”

Yaara Ming stated.

Donford Wu nodded his head, not asking anymore questions.

Going past two streets, the three people, more accurately, if you counted the baby in the swaddle, the four people, arrived at the gates of a courtyard. This was the only structure with a courtyard in this city, taking up a lot of space. The area was about the size of a football (Europe) field, inside were three independent lines of houses side by side, each house not all too big.

After entering the courtyard, Yaara Ming walked towards the west.

“This is the shaman’s place. Tonight, we’ll be staying here.”

“There doesn’t seem to be a lot of people living here.”

Said Donford Wu. There was three lines of houses, each line having five houses. In all there were fifteen, but right now, only two houses were lit.

“We normally don’t live here.”

Yaara Ming went to the house at the south western corner. Opening the doors, they went in.

The room was around twenty square meters. Inside was very spacious, next to the window, was a bamboo bed. On top was simple bedding. In the middle was a square table.

“Is the place frequently cleaned?”

Donford Wu sized up the room. The south side had serious humidity to it, if there wasn’t a person living in the room, it would easily produce a musty smell. But there such smell, and the floor didn’t collect any dust.

“Yeah.”

Yaara Ming took out a fire sparker and lit the oil lamp inside. The so called oil lamp was a small clay bowl filled with some kind of oil fat with a wick in the middle of it.

“We’ll be spending the night here, so you guys get comfortable first. I’m going to ask which Celestial Master is coming tomorrow.”

Yaara Ming turned around to leave.

After Yaara Ming left, the woman holding the child walked over. Smiling at Donford Wu, she said.

“Congratulations.”

“Do I HAVE to marry a lady shaman if I know their name?”

Donford Wu took Food Dump out of its pouch.

“Do you not like our shaman?”

The woman was very surprised.

“I was just asking for the sake of it, you should put the baby down first.”

Donford Wu pointed at the bed.

They walked in a hurry today, the woman was already tired out early on. But she didn’t put the baby down on the bed, but held the baby and sat in a corner. No matter how much Donford Wu urged her, she wouldn’t sleep on the bed, saying that the bed was the shaman’s, she couldn’t sleep on it.

Half an hour later, Yaara Ming came back, bringing a pot of congee with her.

“Any good news?”

Donford Wu asked. Everything that Yaara Ming did and said indicated that her mood was better than when she left.

“Nothing important, we should go to sleep early. The Celestial Master is coming tomorrow early in the morning.”

Yaara Ming gave the bed to the woman, her face filled with fear, and her child. Moving a chair, she brought it to the west side of the entrance to sit down.

“How many Celestial Masters are there in the Gold clan?”

Donford Wu went over.

“Three.”

Yaara Ming casually said.

“Are you familiar with the Celestial Master coming tomorrow?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Yeah, what about it?”

Yaara Ming questioned back.

“Can you ask him to test me?”

Donford Wu smiled.

“Why?”

Yaara Ming laughed.

“I want to see if I can learn how to control the laws.”

Donford Wu said. The Fire clan Celestial Master’s Fury Blaze Dance left a deep impression in his mind.

“Yeah I can, I’ll ask him tomorrow.”

Yaara Ming happily promised.

Donford Wu joyfully nodded his head. He didn’t hold too much hope, but testing was still the best. If he could learn to control the laws, then that’ll be for

the best. But if he couldn't, then he would completely give up on it.

Food Dump had enough rest in the day, so it started his nightly activities. Since the door was closed, he couldn't go out. After 'Hn'ing for a period of time, it started to look for things to do. Thus, it started gnawing on one of the bed legs.

Three in the morning, Donford Wu was woken by chatter outside the courtyard. Waking up, he discovered that Yaara Ming already woke up and was sitting on the bed combing her hair.

"Why didn't you lit the place up?"

Donford Wu was scared by Yaara Ming for moment. Seeing a woman combing her hair in the dark was already scary enough, and this woman was wearing a mask.

"There's some water at the door, you can comb and wash up a bit. Everyone in the tribe would be coming over, you're going up with the Bear King."

Yaara Ming continued to comb her hair.

"But you still didn't have to wake up so early."

Donford Wu sneezed.

Yaara Ming stood up to light up the oil lamp. Walking over to Donford Wu, she passed her wooden comb to Donford Wu.

"Tie up your hair and shave that beard. Then have a change of clothes.

"What they want to look at is Food Dump, not me."

Donford Wu waved his hand and didn't take her wooden comb.

"You, you don't want to use my comb?"

Yaara Ming was a bit sad.

Hearing this, Donford Wu quickly took the wooden comb. But what Yaara Ming said was right, he really didn't want to use Yaara Ming's comb. He felt that the matters between himself and Yaara Ming was a bit too sudden. Right now, he only saw Yaara Ming in a good light, but he hasn't thought about marrying her.

His hair was too short, so he couldn't tie it up. His beard could be shaven off using his dagger. Since he only had this one set of clothes, he didn't change it. If he's dirty, then he's dirty.

More people gathered outside the courtyard, the volume of their chatter growing louder and louder. At seven in the morning a bell rang. Yaara Ming held the baby and brought Donford Wu outside into the courtyard. In the middle of the courtyard was a rather large paved path. On the paved path was six people, all of them were shamans holding copper poles in their hands. The four in the front were older, all of them male shamans. The other two at the back was the lady shaman that greeted Yaara Ming last night, and the other was the male shaman that was scratched by Food Dump. Both holding babies in their arms.

Yaara Ming held the baby and stood next to them. Donford Wu didn't know where to go, so he just hugged Food Dump and sat by a stone pillar on the side of the road.

"Stand, that's for tying up horses."

Yaara Ming said in a low tone.

Right now, the gates of the courtyard were open. A lot of people squeezed themselves towards the entrance. The people who weren't able to squeeze to the entrance surrounded the courtyard walls. Stepping on stones, they were barely able to see over the walls. There was also people on top of the houses and trees surrounding the courtyard.

The male shaman that was clawed smiled at Yaara Ming and waved. Yaara Ming pretended not to see it, not caring about him.

The male villagers that Yaara Ming let out for whatever activities they wanted yesterday night must have spread the news. One to ten, ten to hundred, a lot of people all knew that in Donford Wu's embrace was their Gold clan's next mount of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger. Before the Celestial Master arrived, Food Dump became their center of attention.

The clansmen all recognized that Food Dump was a Pi Xiu, but they didn't seem to be surprised. Because in their eyes, black bears and Pi Xius were both bears, and Pi Xius were even fiercer than black bears.

"When's the Celestial Master coming?"

Donford Wu silently asked Yaara Ming.

Yaara Ming shook her head, swaying her hand to say that he shouldn't speak.

Waiting until he was bored, he placed his gaze on the four shamans in front of them. The youngest shaman of the four was about to turn forty, the oldest should be over fifty. The robes they wore had the same design of the three young shamans behind them, but their robes had a blue color. On top of their copper poles wasn't an Ox head, but rather a curved horned goat. This might be a symbol of their Sage status.

After waiting for more than half an hour, the sun exposed itself from the east, at the same time, Donford Wu heard from the skies of booming thunder. Hearing the thunder, everyone in the city started cheering.

Before this, Donford Wu once heard about the bodily technique Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds that the Gold clan Celestial Masters used. While moving at quick speeds, they're would be a thunderous boom. When Donford Wu heard this sound, this meant that the Celestial Master that came to test the babies was about to arrive.

With curiosity in his heart, Donford Wu turned his head to look at the eastern skies, but he didn't see anyone there. This meant that even though the bodily technique of the Gold clan was quick, but it didn't seem to be like that of a supersonic aircraft that was even faster than sound. The sound first came, then the person came behind.

The thunderous sound became more and more clear, it wasn't long before a small dot appeared in the eastern skies.

"This bodily technique is good in its own ways, but the noise, the noise is too loud, not suitable for ambushes."

Donford Wu said, biting his lips.

Hearing someone talk, Yaara Ming turned her head, Donford Wu quickly placed his gaze back onto the sky.

Following the shortening distance, the black dot also slowly became larger, a

vague outline of a human could already be seen.

Now that the distance was even shorter, he could see that the person's robe wasn't black, but rather a very dark purple.

Waiting until the Celestial Master arrived above the tribe city, the thunderous sound slowly vanished. At this moment, it was visible that the Celestial Master was a sixty, seventy year old elder. With both hands behind his back, he was stepping on top of a copper pole.

Even though the thunderous sound vanished, the Celestial Master was still moving in midair, but the speed was greatly slower than before. At this time, Donford Wu suddenly realized something. The thunderous sound of the Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds would only be made while moving at full speeds, when he slowed down, the thunderous sound would not be there.

When the Celestial Master arrived above the courtyard, he started to slowly descend. This scene greatly amazed Donford Wu. He couldn't get his mind around how he could offset the force of gravity. The only possibility was that through cultivation, they could uncover hidden potential. Following the development of science and technology, human kind relied more and more on tools and machines, instead of using their own potential.

At this moment, he could clearly see the Celestial Master's shape and face. This Celestial wasn't very tall, he was about a meter seventy, an oval face, his shape was to the skinny side, under his chin was a goatee, making him seem dignified. Even though his age was rather old, but it wasn't hard to see that when he was young, he was an extremely handsome man to the point of beauty. The copper pole that the Celestial Master stood on had a ferocious beast skull on the tip of it. The shape of the beast skull looked familiar, thinking about it carefully, that kind of beast head always showed up on bronze made materials in ancient times. It should be a Taotie. (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Taotie>)

About four or five meters away from the ground, the Celestial took back his copper pole and drifted to the ground.

Waiting for him to get his posture, all the shamans knelt down on one knee with their copper pole propped up.

"Welcome Celestial Master."

This sentence was just Donford Wu's understanding of the language. In reality, what the shamans said was much longer and even had modal words in them.

"Esteemed Celestial Master, please accept our humble welcoming and our honest respects."

The Celestial Master didn't reply, only slowly nodded his head.

"Wow he's arrogant."

Donford Wu secretly said.

The Shamans and Sages seeing the Celestial Master nod his head, stood up.

Before this, there was still a light atmosphere, but now, there wasn't any nonsense. After standing up, the four Sages at the front separated into left and right, the lady shaman closest to the front carried the baby and walked over.

Receiving the swaddle from the lady shaman, the Celestial Master took out his right hand and placed his palm on top of the child's forehead, at the same time, he closed his eyes.

After a few seconds, the Celestial Master opened his eyes. Shaking his head, he gave the swaddle back to the nervous lady shaman.

Dismayed, the lady shaman stepped down, letting the male shaman that was clawed to walk over. But after the test, the Celestial Master still shook his head.

Yaara Ming was the last person to take the child over. The amount of time the Celestial Master placed on top of the child's forehead was twice as long as the ones before.

Only until a full three minutes did the Celestial Master open his eyes.

Inside and out the courtyard there wasn't a single bird cry or noise to be heard, everyone's line of sight rested on the Celestial Master.

After a moment of silence, the Celestial Master slowly nodded his head.

Thousands of people screamed in happiness, tens of thousands celebrated.....

Chapter 19 Donford Wu's Blood

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-19/>

Chapter 19 Donford Wu's Blood

The sudden cries of happiness made Donford Wu jump with fright. He didn't think that the Gold clansmen would have such a large reaction. The voice shrilling screams, the shrieks from deep within, all of them were happier than picking up gold, crazier than winning five million yuan.

Waiting until the shrieks and screams died down a little bit, Yaara Ming passed her broken copper pole and the purple colored Inner Dan to the Celestial Master.

"The single eyed Bear King has found a successor, this Pi Xiu."

The Celestial Master passed the child to a blue robed sage by the side, turning, he received the copper pole and Inner Dan. Yaara Ming turned towards Donford Wu and waved, indicating for him to bring Food Dump over.

Donford Wu carrying Food Dump in his arms walked over. The Celestial Master looked at the Inner Dan and copper pole in his hands, then took a look at Food Dump, at last nodding his head Even though the clansmen already knew that Food Dump was the new Bear King, but they still cried out an ear shaking screams in celebration when the Celestial Master recognized its identity.

"Ready a horse carriage for this child and the Bear King to the capital, I shall escort them."

The Celestial Master that has been silent for all this time finally spoke out.

The surrounding shamans replied, the audience once again celebrate.

"Celestial Master, please go the Meeting Hall to have a rest."

The Sage holding the child joyously said at the Celestial Master.

The Celestial Master nodded his head. Giving back the copper pole to Yaara Ming, he turned towards the north and started walking.

Being very close to the Celestial Master, he saw with his own eyes that the Celestial Master casually restored Yaara Ming's copper pole back to how it was originally was. He didn't use any tools, nor did he place the broken parts together, even the ox horn that was gnawed off instantly reappeared.

Just when he was secretly in a daze, a blue robed Sage came over and reached his hand over.

"Give me the Bear King."

Donford Wu frowned, he wasn't willing to part with Food Dump. But Food Dump was the mount of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, he couldn't not give Food Dump to them.

Seeing him hesitate, Yaara Ming gave him a look, indicating for him to give Food Dump to the blue robed Sage.

Right at this moment, the Shaman that was clawed by Food Dump quickly stepped over.

"Grand Sage, the Bear King has already been bewitched by him. Except for him, anyone that gets close to the Bear King will be attacked by Bear King."

Hearing this, Donford Wu didn't wait for the blue robed to react and stuffed Food Dump directly at him.

Food Dump had a great temper, anyone could hold him, so he didn't attack the blue robed Sage, only curiously and nervously looking around.

The blue robed Sage tilted his head and looked at the male shaman with disgust, quickly holding Food Dump, he quickly chased the group that was leaving.

The male shaman originally wanted to shine the shoes of the blue robed Sage while dirtying Donford Wu's at the same time, as a result, he shined the shoe into a mess. Both of his objectives failed and also gained the tribe Sage's disgust while he was at it.

"Has anyone ever told you that you're pretty ugly?"

Donford Wu laughed.

"What did you just say?"

The male shaman's anger flew to this head.

"He said you're ugly."

Yaara Ming continued, next, she pulled Donford Wu and went west.

When Donford Wu was walking, he kept on looking to the north. Seeing Food Dump being carried away, his heart felt very sour. But Food Dump's owner has appeared, Food Dump must follow its owner.

"Ugh."

Donford Wu shook his head, sighing.

"I just didn't have a chance to speak yet, don't be in such a hurry."

Yaara Ming silently comforted Donford Wu.

Donford Wu sighed once again, he wasn't willing to part with Food Dump, and not because he wasn't tested by the Celestial Master that he became in a bad mood.

Just when Yaara Ming wanted to speak again, another lady shaman came over, congratulating her. Having the Celestial Master of the White Tiger in the village was an extremely honorable matter.

Waiting until the lady shaman left, Donford Wu asked Yaara Ming.

"How does the Celestial Master know which of the three children the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is?"

"Their parents are all be normal blood clansmen with mixed blood, which means they shouldn't have pure Gold blood, but they might if the Gold Deity blesses them."

Yaara Ming explained.

"So the Celestial Master tested if they had pure Gold blood?"

Donford Wu asked again.

"Yes."

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

“Has there been a similar case like this before?”

Donford Wu asked.

“One, but his one of his parents was a shaman, the other was a normal clansmen.”

Yaara Ming said.

The two continued to talk until they reached the room. After they went in, the mother immediately came to welcome them, nervously looking at Yaara Ming.

Just when Yaara Ming wanted to tell her the good news, the mother actually fainted. Through Yaara Ming’s eyes, she could guess that her own child was the lucky one. The Celestial Master of the White Tiger was the whole Gold clan’s mental leader, to bear such a child meant that she would become a noble with just one step, no one would not be emotional.

Just when Yaara Ming awoke the mother, a few soldiers from outside the door invited her to the tribe’s meeting hall. She was the mother of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, the Celestial Master wanted to meet her.

The lady fainted once again, the soldiers carried her away on their backs.

“How did he do that?”

Donford Wu pointed at the copper pole in Yaara Ming’s hand.

“Not only can Celestial Masters control metal, they can also restore them, they could even change the metal’s shape.”

Yaara Ming casually said.

“Are the other two Celestial Masters also as arrogant as him?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Was he really that arrogant?”

Yaara Ming laughed.

“Not a small amount that’s for sure. You guys all kneeled down to receive him

and he didn't even say a word. Even an emperor would still tell his people to stand up."

Donford Wu bite his lips.

"He is a Celestial Master, a grand shaman, it is right for us to kneel to him."

Yaara Ming stated

"What right is that, it's just that you guys have too much of a slave personality."

Donford Wu said.

"Not long after, you will also kneel to him."

Yaara Ming laughed again.

"I'm not a slave."

Donford Wu started to think what he should do next. Food Dump was already carried away, there wasn't much meaning to stay here.

"I'll go look for the Celestial Master to test your blood."

Yaara Ming stood up.

"Don't go, I don't want to test."

Donford Wu shook his head. He was a person from four thousand years in the future, his blood was defiantly mixed, to be able to cultivate in controlling the laws was a chance in a chance in a million. And the main reason is that he doesn't want to learn how to cultivate laws. Don't talk about if people will teach even, even if someone is willing, he wouldn't want to learn, if he learnt how to control the laws, he would become a shaman. When he becomes a shaman, he would have to kneel before someone more powerful than himself, he couldn't be fucked to become a person like that.

"No worries, wait here, I'll tell him to come over."

Yaara Ming went out the door

"Don't go beg someone for me, I don't need it, I won't owe people favors."

Donford Wu chased after her.

Yaara Ming turned and smiled at him, raising her hand, she indicated for him to go back.

Donford Wu turned around back into the room. Backpacking his quiver, he took his bow and prepared to leave, but just when he reached the door he paused. Yaara Ming was so kind to him, he couldn't leave without saying good bye.

He originally thought that Yaara Ming would be away for long, but who would've thought that Yaara Ming would come back before five minutes passed, behind her was the purple robed Celestial Master.

"I said I didn't want to ask someone a favor, why didn't you listen?"

Donford Wu yelled at Yaara Ming.

"What happened?"

Yaara Ming was frightened.

Donford Wu didn't reply, only coldly "hmph"ing while walking towards the door.

"Youngster, don't be in such a hurry to leave."

The Celestial Master reached out his copper pole to stop Donford Wu.

"Someone pulled me over to test your blood."

"So she didn't beg you to come over?"

Donford Wu doubtfully asked. The Celestial Master said "Ying Me", which meant pull, hold. No matter what meaning it was, it was an action that only people who were very close or intimate could do.

The Celestial Master shook his head, he then pointed at a chair by the side of the wooden table.

"Sit."

Donford Wu looked back at Yaara Ming. She was currently angry, she turned her head to look somewhere else.

The Celestial smiled, then once again pointed at the chair.

Donford Wu was even more suspicious. The Celestial Master didn't laugh or speak in front of crowd, during the test, he always kept a straight face, only speaking once, and even the tone of that one sentence was casual.

"It's okay if you stand."

The Celestial Master reached out and grabbed Donford Wu's left wrist.

Right when his wrist was grabbed, he felt his left arm had a tingling itching feeling. This feeling quickly spread to his whole body. Just when his mind came back to him, the tingling itching feeling already vanished.

The Celestial Master released Donford Wu's left hand, his face showing a clear sign of suspicion.

"Dad, what is it?"

Yaara Ming nervously asked.

"Dad?"

Donford was in a daze. The pronunciation of dad and mom hasn't changed much since ancient times. The Xia dynasty's language's dad was still dad.

"How can this be?"

The Celestial Master once again grabbed Donford Wu's left hand.

"How is it?"

Yaara Ming was even more nervous.

The Celestial raised his hand, indicating for her not to speak. Turning around, he once again concentrated on feeling out Donford Wu's blood.

The feeling that Donford Wu was feeling was like being sparked by electricity, but the current wasn't that strong, he could feel according to his body that he was tested at least five times, each time lasting longer than the last.

"Dad, what is his blood?"

Yaara Ming couldn't resist asking.

The Celestial Master released Donford Wu's hand, tilting his gaze towards him, he asked.

“What did you just feel?”

“Sour, numb, pain, itchy, there was also a bit of swelling.”

Donford Wu stated.

“Dad, what exactly happened?”

Yaara Ming looked at her father with a hurried expression.

“He has five kinds of blood, each not merging with each other and also not contradicting each other.”

The Celestial Master tucked his hands behind his back and started pacing the room.

Yaara Ming walked to the door and close it, turning her head back towards the Celestial Master, she asked.

“Dad, so are you saying he can cultivate in all ways of controlling the laws of the five clans?”

The Celestial Master shook his arm.

“No, it means he can’t cultivate in any clan’s way of controlling the laws.”

“Why is that?”

Yaara Ming asked, not understanding.

While the father and daughter was chatting, Donford Wu was still stuck on the relationship of the Celestial Master and Yaara Ming. Yara Ming once said that all Gold clan shamans must have pure Gold blood, and a pure Gold blood mostly to the 99th percent must be the child of two pure blooded people. He should’ve knew that Yaara Ming’s parents were shamans.

“The blood in his body is a balance of all five clans, no matter what kind of clan’s control over the laws, if he cultivates it, it would surely break this balance. When this balance breaks, he would immediately die.”

The Celestial Master stated.

“Oh.”

Yaara Ming was bit disappointed.

"They are still waiting for me, I'll come by later."

The Celestial Master didn't know what to say so he left. Pulling open the door, he went towards the east.

"So he was your dad, why didn't you say so earlier."

Donford Wu finally had a chance to speak.

"If you knew who my dad was, would you still be so honest?"

Yaara Ming directly asked back.

"No wonder that fatty was always cooing over you, and I thought he knew what you looked like. After so long, it was for your dad."

Donford Wu said.

Yaara Ming rolled her eyes at Donford Wu, not replying.

"Your dad is a Celestial Master, why are you a shaman at such a remote village?"

Donford Wu placed down the bamboo bow that he was always holding.

"Then where should I have gone?"

Yaara Ming asked.

"You should've stayed at the capital."

Donford Wu stated.

"Your thinking is just like an Earth clansmen, only they would do such pointless stuff."

Yaara Ming shook her head.

"Modern people would do that."

Donford Wu said.

"Don't be in a hurry, wait till my dad comes back. Let him think of something."

Yaara Ming opened up another topic.

"Okay, don't worry, don't worry. I'm really curious about controlling the laws, if I can't learn how to control them, I could do something else....."

Chapter 20 Love Struck

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-20/>

Chapter 20 Love Struck

“Do you really think so?”

Yaara Ming tilted her head to the side and looked at him.

“Yeah.”

Donford Wu nodded.

“Really?”

Yaara Ming confirmed once again.

“Don’t you think you’re a bit annoying?”

Donford Wu took off his quiver, lying down on the bamboo bed.

“I have something to discuss with you.”

Yaara Ming pulled a chair over and sat down.

“What?”

Donford Wu asked.

“My dad is going to leave in a bit, I want to take off my mask before he leaves.”

This sentence that Yaara Ming spoke really did have important things to discuss.

Donford Wu didn’t immediately reply. What she was indicating at was obvious, which is to announce to the world their relationship.

After a short moment of pondering, Donford Wu opened his mouth and said.

“Isn’t it a bit too early?”

“You don’t.....don’t like me?”

Yaara Ming furrowed her brows and frowned.

“I do, but I feel like it’s been too short, the time. This is a bit too quick. And you

know it too, I just came to this world and hasn't even been three months, and I even don't know how the outside world is. We still lack the necessary understanding of each other. To get married now is just too quick for me."

Donford Wu stated.

"It's only taking off the mask, it's not like we'll immediately get married."

Yaara Ming was still satisfied with Donford Wu's attitude. Donford Wu didn't hid his feelings for her, but also honestly said what he really thought.

"When the mask falls, you definitely won't be able to marry someone else. If I find something I seriously don't like about you, or you discovered something you really can't take, then what? "

Donford Wu used his arms to stand up, he then leaned on a wooden wall behind me.

"That makes sense."

Yaara Ming nodded her head, thinking for a bit, she spoke once again.

"How about this, there's still some time before my dad leaves, so you can get to know me as quickly as possible."

"Okay."

Donford Wu nodded his head in agreement. Yaara Ming was a shaman, at this time, she was part of nobility. To actually marry him, who was someone that couldn't cultivate in controlling the laws, was an extremely sincere move. Not only that, Yaara Ming didn't follow her father in being arrogant, at this time, if Donford Wu pushed this away again, it would be hard to push away suspicion.

"What do you want to know, ask."

Yaara Ming stated.

"How many people are in your family?"

Donford Wu asked.

"Dad, Mom, and a big brother."

Yaara Ming replied.

“What shaman ranking is your mom?”

Donford Wu questioned.

“A Dark Jade Sage.”

Yaara Ming replied.

“What is a Dark Jade Sage?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Second to dad.”

Yaara Ming said.

“Would they agree with you marrying a normal person?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Mom definitely won’t agree, but she won’t stop me.”

Yaara Ming replied very straightforward.

“And your dad?”

Donford Wu asked. When you get married, not only do you have to look upon the opinion of the wife, but also their parents. Genes are also important, a child would mostly acquire their parent’s personality. Yaara Ming’s serious side should be from her father, but she still has a kind side, which should be from her mother.

“He really admires you, he would definitely agree.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“How would you know he admires me?”

Dondford Wu felt greatly surprised.

“Dad rarely smiles at people, he just smiled at you before.”

Yaara Ming said.

Donford Wu raised his hands and rolled his head. Just then, when the Celestial Master came, his performance wasn’t all too good. Not only did was he not polite, but he actually was angry at Yaara Ming. If you traded with a normal

father, he would surely not be happy if he saw his own daughter being yelled at. But it seems the Celestial Master wasn't unhappy. As to why the Celestial Master wasn't unhappy, Donford Wu couldn't guess why.

Not long after, Donford Wu stored his doubt away and continued asking.

"If we get married, who gets the final say in things?"

If your decision is correct, then I'll naturally listen to you."

Yaara Ming said.

"Saying it like that is like not saying anything at all."

Said Donford Wu, biting his lip. Every had a different understanding of "correct", he felt that killing all the drug traffickers were correct, and Gabe Zhuang felt that following protocol and orders to capture the drug traffickers was correct.

"If you did something wrong, would you let me listen to you?"

Yaara Ming asked back.

"Fine, let's just act like I never asked. I'm really curious about the central area, if I wanted to go there, would you stop me?"

Donford Wu asked.

"You don't know how to control the laws so going to the Earth clan will be really dangerous. But if you really want to, then I won't stop you."

Yaara Ming stated.

Seeing Yaara Ming sulking, Donford Wu hurriedly said something.

"You already know my situation. I won't ever be able to go back, so I'll be spending the rest of my life here. You can't just let me spend my life here in a mountain range knowing nothing about the world. I want to go out and have a look, know how the outside world is. Then, I'll come back. And saying this, it's not like I'll be leaving immediately. I'll at least stay in the Gold clan for some time so that I can have a basic understanding of the Gold clan first."

"You're right."

Yaara Ming nodded her head, saying.

"Washing clothes, cooking, sorting out the house, who is going to do all these things?"

Donford Wu asked a very unpleasant topic. He was a soldier, most soldiers had to cook and wash their own clothes and cook their own food. But the atmosphere in the military led most of the soldiers too have Machismo thinking, thinking that men should do what men do and women should do what women do.

Yaara Ming didn't have any amount of hesitation, smiling, she said.

"Of course I'll do it."

"Okay, I have nothing to ask. It's your turn, ask."

Donford Wu was very satisfied with Yaara Ming's answers.

"Wait, I still have one more."

Donford Wu straightened his back.

"What is it?"

Yaara Ming asked.

Donford Wu didn't immediately reply, but hesitantly thought how to make the last question not too embarrassing.

"You see, you're a shaman. You're dad, mother and brother are also shamans. And I'm just a normal person. If we are together, there would surely be some conflicts, at that time, you and your family....."

"Don't worry, we won't hit you."

Yaara Ming smiled, interrupting Donford Wu's jitter.

"What I meant is that you guys can't use your control over the laws against me."

Donford Wu's thoughts was spoken by Yaara Ming. He was a bit embarrassed, even if he lost all his armor and equipment, he was still much more powerful than the soldiers and civilians here. But he definitely wasn't an opponent for a shaman that knew how to control the laws.

“The same meaning.”

Yaara Ming laughed.

“Your turn, ask me.”

Donford Wu waved his hand to urge her.

“I don’t have anything to ask.”

“What?”

Donford Wu was a bit surprised.

“That night when I knew you saw my face, I always hesitated if I should kill you the following few days. After a period of time of silently observing you, I found out that you have a noble character, a kind heart, is diligent and hard working. When you’re alone with Walda Ming, you didn’t bully here, thus, I slowly started to fall in love with you.....”

Yaara Ming’s confession and praise without any decoration made Donford Wu flush a bit. Hurriedly using a wave of his hand to stop Yaara Ming’s words.

“This, this, secretly peeping on people isn’t that good, I also have bad points. It’s just that you haven’t discovered them yet.”

“I discovered them, you have a really irritable temple, and every time you fight you’re too vicious. Not only do you not like being clean, you only wash your face every few days. When you’re not taking a bath, you don’t wash your feet.....”

“Stop right there, stop, right, there. I was injured then, I couldn’t move freely. And I’m not vicious, it was just self-defense. Do you know self-defense, it is when people bully you and you protect yourself.”

Donford Wu regretted his modesty from before. Xia dynasty people weren’t like people from the Ming and Qing dynasty. The people of the Ming and Qing dynasty likes to talk in riddles, twisting here and there, making everything horrible. Xia dynasty weren’t like that. Even though they also have ulterior motives, but when they talk, they ask for an accurate explanation and meaning of their words. Making everything extremely direct, sometimes to the point of exaggeration.

Yaara Ming nodded her head, not continuing.

“What was that last sentence?”

Donford Wu only discovered it now.

Yaara Ming was wide eyed for a moment, only then did she understand what she leaked out of her mouth.

“It seems like you took advantage of me. Haha, when you’re going to take a bath, tell me, I also want to take a peek.”

Donford Wu laughed.

Just when he finished speaking, the Celestial Master came walking in from the door.

The atmosphere at this instance was embarrassing to the limit. While flirting with a beauty and coincidentally meeting up with the beauty’s father, this kind of embarrassing situation was as embarrassing as can be.

When people grow old they become wiser. The Celestial Master didn’t show any dissatisfaction, pretending to not have heard anything, he walked inside and told Yaara Ming.

“I need to head to the capital immediately.”

Saying that, he turned towards Donford Wu.

“Youngster, cultivating isn’t the only way to become famous, don’t be heartbroken. As long as you work hard, no matter what you do, you can earn other people’s respect.”

“I’ll remember your words.”

Donford Wu heavily nodded his head. The tolerance and mind of the Celestial Master made Donford Wu submit to him.

“Dad, I want to take off my mask.”

Yaara Ming’s had an asking for an opinion tone to her words, and a can’t be changed tone “You sure?”

The Celestial Master smiled while asking.

“Yes!”

Yaara Ming heavily nodded her head.

The Celestial Master looked at Yaara Ming, then looked at Donford Wu. Following, he also nodded his head.

“Then take it off.”

“Thank you dad.”

Yaara Ming joyously jumped up.

“After I leave, you guys get to the village as quickly as possible. At least seven days, at most half a month, I’ll be coming to find you two.”

The Celestial Master said in a low voice.

“Dad, what happened?”

Yaara Ming immediately recognized the seriousness of a problem.

“The child you brought wasn’t a pure Gold blood.”

The Celestial Master stated.

“What?!”

Yaara Ming stared at him with wide eyes, stunned.

The Celestial Master sighed out.

“These years, the Gold clan is already too full with being bullied and humiliated, passing these years with incomparable pain. The clansmen need hope, the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is their only hope, and we must give them hope.”

“Does Uncle (Gu) Gabriella and Uncle Xavier (Xi) know this?

“Before I started to move, I discussed it with them.”

The Celestial Master nodded. Turning around, he took out that purple colored Inner Dan from his robe and passed it over to Yaara Ming.

“Even though that child isn’t the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, but the Pi Xiu you two brought was really the Bear King. After the tour around the capital, I’ll bring it back to you guys. I’ll replace it with another Pi Xiu.”

"Why are you giving it to us?"

Yaara Ming not understanding.

"The Bear King and Celestial Master are both targets for our enemies. For them to stay at the capital is very dangerous."

The Celestial Master once again lowered his voice even more.

"Following the past, the Bear King and Celestial Master of the White Tiger should show up at the same area, if it is sent back there, maybe it can find the Celestial Master of the White Tiger through the divine spirit."

"But the children that were born this year were the three you just tested."

Yaara Ming stated.

"I'm suspecting that the Celestial Master of the White Tiger wasn't part of the babies born this year."

The Celestial Master said.

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

"They are all ready and are waiting for me. Take off your mask and send me off."

Said the Celestial Master.

Yaara Ming used her hand to take off her mask, the Celestial Master smiled while looking at his own daughter. Turning around, he walked to door.

Yaara Ming also followed.

Arriving at the door, the Celestial Master gestured at the Donford Wu who was hesitating if he should follow, indicating that he should come too.

Donford Wu was a bit embarrassed, but he still followed them out. Right now, his mood was extremely good. For one, Food Dump was going to be given back to him. Two, on that night, he only caught a glimpse which only left a rough image to him. Then, Yaara Ming had her nose beaten by the Earth clan shaman. With her nose bleeding, it wasn't that clear, but today, he could clearly see it clearly. Beautiful.

Chapter 21 Gold Clan Tribe

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-21/>

Chapter 21 Gold Clan Tribe

The crowd outside the courtyard still hasn't dispersed. When Yaara Ming came out, it immediately caused a sensation in the crowd. In the eyes of a male Gold clansmen, a mask wearing lady shaman was a beautiful yet mysterious scene. Every single person would guess what kind of face was hiding behind the ferocious mask. After countless guesses and imaginations, today, they finally had an answer. A calm noble composure, brighter than anything around them.

This answer led all the males feel satisfied. But in the midst of satisfaction, there was a deep, deep feel of lose. This was because when the day the puzzle was solved, was the day the beautiful flower found a companion.

And the companion of this beautiful flower made them disgusted. Messy hair, creases all over his clothes, buttons not in order. When he walked, his posture was all over the place. His face was rather plain. On his face was an expression of happiness, no seriousness was hinted on it at all.

Jealousy will rush to people's heads, making them unable to judge without fairness. The handsome and heroic Donford Wu was seen as just a lucky guy with nothing else in the eyes of these shorter than a meter seventy male Gold clansmen.

Donford Wu simply just didn't know what these people were thinking, even if he did, he wouldn't take it in his heart. Everything that happened today made him happy. Yaara Ming's beauty exceeded his expectations, the Celestial Master's reasonable and wisdom filled open-mind made him feel greatly surprised. The most important thing was that he didn't need to keep thinking so badly of himself and didn't need to dampen the relationship with Food Dump. In these days from morning till night, he was already accustomed to being together with the furry little meatball. To one's liking, everything that happened to Donford Wu was exactly that, to one's liking.

And something that was even more to his liking came afterwards. Yaara Ming

took the initiative to holding his hands. This action without question announced to the crowd the two's relationship.

At this time, there were three horse carriages stopped just outside the courtyard. All of them were large carriages with eight horses pulling them. Except for the coachman at the front and back carriages, separately sat a blue robed Sage and four soldiers with bow and arrows at their back. The carriage in the middle had the fortunate and unfortunate mother and son, Food Dump was being carried by another blue robed Sage, who also sat in this carriage.

Food Dump was awake at this time and was currently looking around it in the hug of the blue robed Sage. Seeing Donford Wu appear, it started to struggle with all its strength. Crying with a “N”ing sound, it tried to shake off the Sage's hold and run to reunite with him.

“Your mother and brother doesn't know about this matter.”

The Celestial Master said without turning back.

Yaara Ming responded with a low grunt.

Struggling so many times without being able to shake off the Sage's hold, Food Dump was a bit anxious. Sounding out a “Wu” noise sound, it rioted against the Sage holding it. The Sage holding it heard the hostility hidden in the growl. Even if he didn't dare to let go, he was also afraid of its claws and bites. This was a claw that could break metal.

Seeing this situation, Donford Wu used his finger to point at Food Dump. Before, when he did this gesture, he also said a phrase. “Be good.”

Eyeing Donford Wu's finger pointing at it, Food Dump immediately stopped struggling. It remembered this gesture, and remembered the consequences if it continued to horse around. It didn't want Donford Wu to hit its head, it especially didn't want to be kicked in the butt.

The copper pole out of his head, floating from the ground, the Celestial Master easily got on. Standing on the copper pole, he rose to the sky. In a clear voice resounding out.

“The Gold Deity, Rhys forever protects his sons and people, the almighty Gold

Deity is with us.”

“The almighty Gold Deity is with us.”

All the Gold clansmen knelled down, except for the ones that climbed on top of tress and Donford Wu.

Next, the Celestial Master did a few gestures, the coachmen whipping their reins to drive forward. Eight horses rushed together, leaving dust in their wake.

The Celestial Master placed his hands behind his back, following in mid-air.

“Why is it like their leaving a ghost city?”

Donford Wu mutter biting his lips. Even just setting off, the three carriages went full speed, with eight horses pulling one carriage, you could imagine just how fast they were.

Yaara Ming didn’t reply, what Donford Wu spoke out in was in the modern language, so she didn’t understand.

“Gold Deity, please protect them, I hope they can reach the capital safely.”

Yaara Ming turned around and walked towards the room.

“Don’t worry, the Earth clan won’t get the news so quickly.”

Donford Wu knew what Yaara Ming was worrying about.

“If you didn’t release that Earth shaman, then I really wouldn’t have to worry.”

When Yaara Ming said this, there wasn’t any complaint or dissatisfaction in her voice, only speaking matter with matter.

“She was about to starve to death, if I had to guess, she is probably still finding things to eat in the mountain, how could she run back so quickly.”

Donford Wu was a bit ashamed, his actions really did give the Gold clan a lot of hidden dangers.

“Let’s start packing, when are we going to move?”

Yaara Ming asked.

Donford Wu could hear that Yaara Ming changed her words midway. What she

wanted to say should be “Let’s start packing, then leave.”, the reason why she changed midway was a sort of respect to him, to ask for his opinion.

“Since there isn’t really anything urgent, why don’t we go tomorrow? I want to go around the city.”

Donford Wu asked. It took so long to just come here, he didn’t know when he would be coming back.”

“Okay.”

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

Arriving back at the room, Donford Wu picked up his water jug and drank a few mouthfuls, putting it back down, he asked Yaara Ming.

“Where will be staying for the night today?”

“Still here.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“Then I’ll leave my bow and arrows here.”

Donford Wu told her.

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

“You can’t be like this, finding the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is something happy, how can you have such a long face. If people saw you, they’ll start to be suspicious.”

Donford Wu said. Maybe it was because Yaara Ming was so used to wearing the mask, now that she had taken it down, it was hard to hide her emotions.

Yaara Ming nodded her head, turning around, she spoke out to ask.

“Do you think that the real Celestial Master of the White Tiger is still alive?”

“I don’t know.”

Donford Wu shook his head. What he knew about the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was extremely little. Only knowing that every generation of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was a different person, and not some kind of spirit transfer from one to another.

Yaara Ming frowned.

"You see, you see. This is what I was talking about, you're frowning again. You have to learn how to control your expression."

Donford Wu told her, biting his lips.

Yaara Ming's mood was very heavy, following, she grabbed the mask on top of the table and put it back on.

"Why are you putting it back on?"

Donford Wu couldn't laugh or cry.

Yaara Ming didn't respond.

"You don't have to be so worried, we'll know if the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is still alive soon."

Donford Wu spoke out to comfort her.

Hearing him, Yaara Ming turned her head.

Donford Wu reached out and took off her mask.

"Since the Earth clan sent so many shamans to kill the Gold clan's children, this means that their shamans have some kind of way to control the laws to guess or sense that your Celestial Master of the White Tiger appeared. Since they have such an ability, this naturally means they'll know if your Celestial Master of the White Tiger is still alive or not. If the Celestial Master of the White Tiger really was killed by them, then the Earth clan wouldn't send any more people. If the true Celestial Master of the White Tiger hasn't died yet, then they'll definitely come again."

Yaara Ming continually nodded her head.

"That makes sense, if dad and them are blocked midway, then that means our Celestial Master of the White Tiger is still alive."

"How many days will it take to get to the capital from here?"

Donford Wu asked.

"On a quick horse, it needs one day and night."

Yaara Ming replied.

“Which direction is the capital?”

Donford Wu inquired.

“Over there.”

Yaara Ming pointed her finger towards the north eastern direction.

“That should be around Lincang, Luoyang to Lincang is about five thousand kilometers, don’t talk about how long it would take for the news to get to them, even if they immediately knew and organized people, they would have no way to rush over here in such a short amount of time. So relax, your dad won’t meet any obstacles.”

Donford Wu quickly calculated a few analysis. Even though the environment changed, but the geography shouldn’t have too much of a change.

Yaara Ming was a bit muddled, she hasn’t heard of the two places that Donford Wu spoke of.

Donford Wu took the initiative to explain.

“I don’t know what the Xia dynasty’s capital’s name is, but I know its approximate location.”

“You went there before?”

Yaara Ming still hasn’t gotten her mind around his words.

“In my life a few thousand years later, I went there before. I know the approximate distance between here and there.”

Donford Wu stated. The confusion in Yaara Ming’s face still hasn’t completely dissipated. Adding another sentence.

“The stream to the east of your village is the place I arrived at this period of time. Before that, I was always living the life of a modern person four thousand years in the future.”

“I understand, when you arrived to our time, you always stayed around our village, not going very far. You want to go the central to see how it is like in our

time."

Yaara Ming stated.

"Smart!"

Donford Wu raised his thumb at Yaara Ming. To have beauty and smarts is naturally the best, if he could only pick one, he would pick smarts. There is no use in looking good and being dumb, there was no way for them to converse.

Yaara Ming happily laughed. The reason why she was happy wasn't only because Donford Wu praised her, but because of Donford Wu's optimistic personality and wise and farsighted judgement. This made her feel more and more that she picked the right man.

Donford Wu walked over to the door and took a look.

"The crowd has just about gone, let's go out."

"Okay."

Yaara Ming stood up.

"Did you bring the shells?"

"Of course."

Yaara Ming pointed at a small pouch at her waist.

Just when they left the door, they once again met the lady shaman that talked with Yaara Ming last night. The two intimately talked. Before today, the lady shaman didn't know how Yaara Ming looked. Today was the first time she saw Yaara Ming's real face, praising Yaara Ming's beauty, she then congratulated the two.

Right at this moment, the male shaman walked over from the east with a dismayed expression. This time, he didn't greet Yaara Ming, only looking at Donford Wu with a ruthless expression, he walked around them.

Waiting until the lady shaman led her villagers to leave, Donford Wu and Yaara Ming left the courtyard to walk around the city.

The looking back rate on the streets were high with Yaara Ming on it. There were

extremely few women as beautiful as her, and such a beautiful lady shaman was even rarer. Donford Wu took the gazes of jealously from all around, not caring about it.

The Gold clan had six tribes, each tribe having tens of villages. The people living at the tribes didn't mine, they mainly farmed and did business. There was more corn and millet in the food sold, at this time, there still wasn't any rice. Except for corn and millet there was still some beans. There was both big and small beans. The small beans were about the size of a match head, the big ones was about the size of a finger nail. These beans could be cooked, and was one of the main sources of food.

There was also vegetables, and there was no small amount. But Donford Wu couldn't recognize a lot of them. There was okra, bamboo shoots, bracken and melons, the others he didn't know about.

There was cow, sheep, horse, and pig for meat, but not every day. What was killed was not stable, beef was the most expensive, lamb next, horse following, and the cheapest was pig meat. Why was there such an arrangement, was because Yaara Ming said the oxen were used to farm land, generally not killed. Sheep could produce wool, so they couldn't just kill them. Even though horse milk didn't taste all too good, but it was still milk, only pig had no use, so they were the cheapest.

Most of the fish was carp and goldfish. The others Donford Wu didn't recognize. At this this, the carps and goldfishes were much larger than the ones in modern times, the fins of the fishes were also longer than the ones in modern times.

Except for eating, there was also a place for cloth. Silk was the most expensive and had the least amount of. Linen had the most. The cheapest was fur, this kind of expensive cloth in modern times was dirt chip here. The reason was simple, this place was part of a tropical terrain, so in such hot weather, no one would like wearing clothes made out of fur.

The goods sold mostly consisted of only cloth and food, the currency was this kind of shells. What was most welcomed was trading goods such as salt and other kinds of livestock.

When they were walking around, Donford Wu discovered that on the walls on hanging of them was a lot of huge skulls. Only till he asked Yaara Ming did he know that these were wild beasts that invaded the tribe. After being killed, the skulls would be placed on the walls to warn others. This meant that this place wasn't some kind of heaven, living here was also not safe.

In this day and age, there weren't any inns or restaurants, but there were places that sold cooked food. The way they sold the food was pretty interesting. Using a rock stove with a fire underneath it, a whole pig would be shoved into it, different kind of tree leaves as spices was also thrown inside. There wasn't any scales when the meat was sold, according to the place of the meat and how large it, people could trade for it or buy it. These people must have done this for a long time so they already knew what the prices were, with a single axe, they knew what was what.

Walking around till they were tired, and the sky turning dark, it was about time to go back to sleep.....

Chapter 22 I Want To Sleep With You

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-22/>

Chapter 22 I Want To Sleep With You

Walking into the courtyard, Yaara Ming stopped where she was.

"You can stay in my room tonight."

"Where will you be staying?"

Donford Wu asked.

Yaara Ming pointed at a small house to the north west side.

"I already discussed it with my friend today. Tonight, I'll borrow her room."

"Why are you staying in someone else's house, you should sleep in your own house. You can sleep on the bed, I'll sleep on the floor."

Donford Wu stated.

Yaara Ming tilted her head to look at Donford Wu.

"Okay, okay. Go."

Donford Wu waved his hand, going towards Yaara Ming's room.

"I'll call you tomorrow morning."

Yaara Ming went towards the north.

Donford Wu was a bit disappointed, with a beautiful woman in front of you, if you didn't have any naughty thoughts meant you were a dickless man. But the reason he suggested they live in the same room was not so that he could climb onto her in the middle of the night, but through real talk and honest sleeping, to prove to Yaara Ming that he was a true gentleman that didn't attack people in a dark room. Too bad that she didn't give him this opportunity.

But Donford Wu didn't stay dismayed for long, very quickly, Donford Wu went back to his originally mood. In this world there was no such thing as a true gentleman that didn't attack people in a dark room. If he really did stay in the same room, he definitely wouldn't be 'honest'. Even if he was 'honest', it would

be faking it. There was nothing good from pretending stuff like this. If he wasn't successful, than it would be disgraceful. If it was successful, he would just be suppressing himself.

Closing the door, climbing onto the bed, closing his eyes, and sleeping.

After five minutes, Donford Wu opened his eyes. He couldn't sleep, he was still suppressing it. If he didn't have a wife, then there was nothing he could do. But if he had a wife and still suppressed it, it would seem a bit nonsensical.

Only until a full ten minutes of hesitation passed by, did he finally decided to stop all this nonsense, he was going to find Yaara Ming.

But after his feet touched the ground, he started to hesitate again. If he went, this surely would be like ripping his face right off, all of his gentleman airs would be all gone, his reputation gone right to the gutter.

If all he cared about was reputation, means living a suffering live. After a short moment of hesitation, he decided to throw away his reputation and not suffer. He put on his shoes and went out.

The room Yaara Ming was in was still lit, Donford Wu followed the lamp light and found her room. With a "Kok Kok" sound, he knocked on the door.

Yaara Ming opened the door. Combing her hair while tilting her head to look at him. She didn't say anything, nor did she indicated to let him go in.

"You're my woman, I want to sleep with you."

Donford Wu took out his militaristic aura. His senior officers would also be this direct when finding companions. I have taken a liking to you, will you accept it.

Yaara Ming didn't feel surprised, only a bit embarrassed. Her cheeks reddening, she said.

"We still haven't gotten married yet."

"Just tonight."

Donford Wu moved towards the inside.

"This doesn't match our etiquette."

Yaara Ming stopped him off.

“Relax, I’ll marry you.”

Donford Wu forcefully pushed forward.

“No.”

Yaara Ming reached out and pushed him.

Yaara Ming wasn’t a normal woman, she wasn’t weak at all. She fully pushed Donford Wu down the steps.

“Are you afraid I won’t marry you?”

Donford Wu asked.

Yaara Ming had pushed him to a stagger, making her feel a bit guilty. She quickly shook her head.

“That’s not it, I know you will. It’s just that I feel that this isn’t right.”

“Taking advantage and not taking responsibility is not right.”

Donford Wu once again walked towards the inside.

“You should go back.”

Yaara Ming once again blocked him.

“I’m honestly telling you. I really do feel embarrassed coming over, I’m gritting my teeth to do this. What you are doing is throwing my reputation down a cliff.”

Donford Wu’s face was fully red.

“It’s too quick.”

Yaara Ming shook her head.

“So you can be quick, and I can’t. I wasn’t ready for when you took off your mask. Now that I’m ready, you’re all twisting and twirling. Don’t block me, let me inside.”

Donford Wu frowned.

“Go back, we really can’t do it.”

Yaara Ming spoke in a serious tone.

“I’m suffering, don’t you care?”

Donford Wu also pulled out a serious face.

"Just go back, we'll talk about this later."

Yaara Ming shook her head.

Donford Wu turned around and left.

Arriving back to the room, he searched for his pack of cigs. Lighting one up, he sat on a chair and got angry. Once he calmed down, he didn't feel that he did anything wrong. If they decided to get married, then what's the difference with doing it a day earlier or a day later, why must they wait until they got married. The only reason to wait until they got married was to make sure that after the man got his fill, he didn't run. The price that the man had to pay was that he had to suppress himself from the day his relationship was made sure of and the day they got married. This just meant that they didn't trust men. If they don't trust a man, then why the fuck would they want to make sure of their relationship.

Thinking to this point, Donford Wu threw away the cigarette butt and stood up. He threw the quiver of arrows onto his back and pushed the door about to go out.

Just when he left the door, he stopped. He pondered if he wasn't treating this matter properly. If he just left like this, would it be unfair to Yaara Ming. Thinking about it carefully, he still walked towards the courtyard's entrance. Right now, his mood was bad to the extreme. The old folk tales got it right. Males are afraid of choosing the wrong professions and females are afraid of marrying the wrong person. A lady choosing a husband is the largest choice of their whole life. It was like a war, you have to pick the best target, and quickly rush to seize it. It was not alright if you choose the wrong one or seized too late. Choosing the wrong target meant falling into a sewage dump. Seizing too late meant that he already got taken by another woman. Even though Yaara Ming choose him, but she didn't immediately seize him. What this said about her was that she didn't believe he was the best target, so it didn't matter if she didn't seize him right away. If not, she wouldn't have pushed him away when she knew that he was suffering from suppressing his sexual intentions.

He walked very decisively. He thickened his skin to knock, and as a result he cut pushed out. His reputation really couldn't stay, he had to leave.

At the moment he arrived at the courtyard's gates, he faintly saw a person lying down in front of the guard hose, that person didn't move an inch, nor did Donford Wu know if he was dead or alive.

To be lying outside meant that something happened. It could be that he fainted from a sickness, or was attacked by something. Donford Wu quickly ran over. When he was pretty close, he could immediately smell a thick scent of blood. Looking down, he saw that the old man who took care of the courtyard was already dead. The fatal wound was on the jugular, slit by a sharp weapon.

"Enemy!"

Donford Wu instantly went into a battle mode.

Motive: A normal civilian wouldn't dare to kill someone where the shamans live, and the opponent brought a weapon, this meant that they were prepared. Most likely an enemy from outside.

Identity: Earth clan Celestial Master level high rank shaman, except for this kind of shaman, a normal shaman wouldn't have been able to reach here this quickly.

Goal: Acquired the information, came to kill the Celestial Master of the White Tiger.

In just a few seconds, Donford Wu made a judgement. Following this, he took off his shoes. His opponent was an expert, they would have extremely acute senses. Wearing shoes would make noise.

Taking off his shoes, he immediately stuck to the north side walls. From the walls, he speed towards the room that Yaara Ming was in. Yaara Ming once said that shamans could see clearly in the night. The darkness wouldn't give him any kind of protection, he must use other things to hide himself.

At this time, most of the shamans have all left. Going back, even if they hadn't left, they truly weren't this person's opponent. His opponent came ready, this meant they were fully prepared.

Even though his heart was in a hurry, he didn't shout out. What the person came for wasn't to steal, shouting out wouldn't be able to scare them off. It'll only make the situation even worse.

While he was carefully moving, Donford Wu also started to look for traces of the enemy. The sky was already dark, his vision was hindered. Looking for his target would be extremely difficult. Not only that, his opponent wasn't like a ghost moving through a village which made dogs bark and chickens to flap their wings. All this time he couldn't hear any strange noises.

This courtyard was very large. Three rooms were lit up, one was Yaara Ming's room, and the other two were towards the north eastern direction. He wasn't sure just how many shamans were here, but there definitely wasn't a lot.

A light in a north western room suddenly extinguished.

At the same time, a black shadow flashed by from the northern paved road.

Donford Wu made quick judgement of this. One, there should be at least two enemies, and right now, they were splitting up. Two, the enemies were closer to Yaara Ming's room than him, so he had no way of not alerting his opponents before reaching Yaara Ming.

Donford Wu stared at the position that the black shadow had vanished from. A few seconds later, that black shadow once again flashed by. He saw what happened clearly this time, this person didn't run from room to room, but suddenly appeared outside a room and then quickly moving towards another room's wall and vanishing. This meant that his opponent knew how to control the laws to make themselves able to go through walls!

After a few seconds passed, the black shadow once again appeared, going into another room.

Donford Wu waited until the person went into the room. Quickly going pass the paved road in the middle of the courtyard, he stuck to an east wall of a west side room. Turning his head to look towards the north, the black shadow once again appeared after a few seconds. Like a factory, once again going into another room.

The amount of time the person spent outside was extremely short, he didn't even have a chance to release an arrow.

Seeing the person getting closer and closer to Yaara Ming's room, Donford Wu became more anxious. He thought of using fire to attract the person's attention,

but there wasn't anything that could light up quickly around him. He once again thought of using himself as bait, but this plan wouldn't work. With that kind of speed, before he finished shouting, his opponent would appear in front of him.

After a hurried pondering, Donford Wu ran towards a pile of bamboo to the west side. This was diagonal to Yaara Ming's room.

Just when he got to his position, the black shadow appeared in front of Yaara Ming's room.

Donford Wu didn't think for long. Bending his arm to ready his bow, he placed an arrow and released it.

Hearing the sound, the black shadow raised his hand. Casually catching the bone arrow Donford Wu shot at full force, the shadow threw it back at him. Before he could even react, the bone arrow already imbedded itself into his chest. The large amount of power contained within the arrow directly lifted him off from the pile of bamboo, sending him flying towards the courtyard wall around ten meters away.

The powerful blow was like being hit by a hammer, uncontrollably he fell forward down to the ground.

Even though he was seeing stars, he could still tilt his body before falling down, preventing the bone arrow stuck in his chest to cause more damage from his own body weight.

After falling to the ground, he coughed out the blood stuck in his throat. After spitting out the blood, the amount of stars he could see decreased. Raising his hand to his chest, he discovered that even though the body armor didn't stop the bone arrow, but it slowed down most of the force behind it. The arrow pierced through the body armor, skin and meat, embedding itself into his sternum.

Donford Wu gritted his teeth and pulled out the bone arrow. Breathing heavily, he stood up with his arms supporting him. Taking out his dagger, he rushed to Yaara Ming's room. At this time, the black shadow already vanished, without asking, the person already went in.

Yaara Ming's room was lit, but the window was covered by linen, so he

couldn't see what was happening inside. He could only hear that inside was a chair falling down.

Donford Wu broke the door down and went in. Only seeing a person wearing black clothes and masked was pressing down on Yaara Ming's throat on with his left hand top of the bamboo bed. His right hand currently shredding her clothes. Yaara Ming couldn't make any noise, using both her hands, she struggled with all her strength.

He didn't have any hesitation, rushing towards the black clothed person, the black clothed person turned his head to look at the sound. Discovering that the person rushing in was him, he felt greatly surprised. Most likely he didn't think that he could survive after taking an arrow from him.

Using this opportunity, he continued to rush closer to them. His dagger going straight for his opponent's stomach. He knew how powerful his opponent was. He could guess that if he tried to back lock him in a chock hold he would definitely be able to dodge it. So he could only ask for this.

But even this "this" he couldn't ask for. Before his dagger could break through his opponent's skin and enter his flesh, his opponent suddenly used his right hand to catch Donford Wu's wrist. With his kind of strength, it was impossible for Donford Wu to get his dagger any closer.

Just when his opponent was coldly laughing and shattering his right hand. Donford Wu used his head to head-butt his opponent's forehead. Not being able to guess that he would be this fierce, he wasn't able to dodge and was hit directly. With his mind in a daze, he unconsciously loosened his grip on Yaara Ming's throat.

Using this opportunity, Donford Wu threw his opponent on the ground. Placing his body on top his opponent's body upside down. He used his legs crisscrossed on his opponent's head and arms to hold the legs to momentarily lock the black clothed person in place. At the same time, he shouted at Yaara Ming who was coughing up a fit.

"I can't do this for long, quick, run....."

Chapter 23 Different From Ordinary People

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-23/>

Chapter 23 Different From Ordinary People

Yaara Ming didn't run. Grabbing her copper pole, she smashed down towards the black clothed person's head.

The black clothed person rolled over with Donford Wu. Yaara Ming couldn't retract fast enough and the copper pole ended up smashing down on Donford Wu's back.

"Run!"

Donford Wu continued to cry out. What he was using was the close combat's submission choke hold, generally used for capturing opponents that were needed alive, it works one hundred times out of hundred. But today, he felt that the submission choke hold wasn't working too well. His opponent was using a huge and invisible pushing force. He needed to use all his strength just to barely lock his opponent in place.

Yaara Ming didn't listen to him, but continued to wave around her copper pole to hit the enemy.

Even though the black clothed person was grappled by Donford Wu, but that didn't mean he couldn't move. It was just that he momentarily couldn't escape from Donford Wu. In Donford Wu's grapple, the black clothed person still had a small area that he could move in, which was more than enough to doge Yaara Ming's attacks.

"YOLOing is going to make my YOLO useless."

Donford Wu roared.

Yaara Ming gritted her teeth and made a difficult decision. After half a moment of hesitation did she finally make the right decision. Turning around she rushed out of the door.

"I'll remember you for all my life."

Donford Wu had already exhausted all his strength. But with Yaara Ming's action, strength once again came flowing into his body. His four limbs going over their limbs, tightly locked his opponent. Seeing that his invisible pushing force couldn't force Donford Wu off, the black clothed person once again retracted the force back into his body.

Just when he was worrying if he could endure another push from his opponent, Yaara Ming who he originally thought already left came back. But she came flying back. Crashing into the table and chairs in the room, she fell to the ground.

"YOLO, it's over, it's all over."

Donford Wu fell into despair, the black clothed person's partner has arrived.

With all his hope shattered into pieces, his strength all left him. The black clothed person fiercely released his invisible pushing force and sent him shakily flying away. Crashing into a wall, he once again spit out blood.

With a twirl, the black clothed person stood up. Raising his leg into a back kick, he sent Donford Wu who was collapsed on the ground and the wall he was by outside into the courtyard.

Once again being hit heavily, Donford Wu suddenly felt the whole world spinning around, everything he saw was suddenly dimming down. But he forcefully endured it and didn't faint. Even though he couldn't do anything more, but he still wanted to know what would happen to Yaara Ming.

"Second Senior Brother, your old sickness came out again."

A dissatisfied womanly voice came out from inside the house.

Discovering that his partner was a woman, Donford Wu's heart relaxed. With a woman there, the black clothed person definitely wouldn't try to ** Yaara Ming again.

"Tong~"

The crisp sound of metal crashing into each other sounded out.

"What are you doing?"

"I've never seen such beauty, it would be such a waste to kill her."

It was the black clothed person's voice.

"What were we supposed to do here?"

The woman reminded him with a dissatisfied tone.

"Right, let's go!"

The black clothed man's voice.

After a short moment of silence, the sound of a chair shaking came out from inside. Without asking, the enemies had already left and Yaara Ming was currently standing up.

Just when Donford Wu thought everything was alright, his vision slowly tunneling into darkness, Yaara Ming's surprised scream sounded out from inside the room. This scream was like a needle of adrenaline. Instantly splitting apart Donford Wu's daze.

"Since we couldn't do it today, I'll come find you again later. Hehehehe."

It was the voice of the black clothed person.

The room once again went into silence.

Following a few hurried steps, Yaara Ming came running out of the missing wall. Hugging the broken body that was Donford Wu, she shook him and cried.

"How you are. How are you?"

"If you don't swagger this swaggity swag of bulging muscles, then this brah might not YOLO too soon."

"Lie down and don't move, I'll going to go find somebody."

Yaara Ming carefully placed Donford Wu down, turning around, she ran towards the north east.

"Brah, I'm afraid that everyone already YOLOed."

Donford Wu said.

Yaara Ming didn't hear what he said and continued running to the north east.

Fainting is a kind of self-protection for the body. It is to stop the severe pain

from damaging the nerves in the human body. Donford Wu stopped himself from fainting twice. Right now, even though his whole body was in pain, his brain was abnormally awake. What he did first was to check what happened to his body.

Brain is awake, meaning the head hasn't been hurt.

Lower limbs are able to move, the legs weren't hurt.

Left arm could move as he wanted, nothing happened.

Right arm sending out a numbing sensation, the first signs of bone fracture. With his left arm, he found out that his ulna (thinner long bone on your forearm) on his right arm was broken.

At last, he examined his sternum and ribs. His sternum had an arrow wound on it, the ribs to the left and right of the wound was slightly off, five of the six ribs on the left was fractured. This was the result of the black clothed person's kick.

Apart from these, there was still the two internal damages down from crashing into the wall twice. Spitting blood meant his lungs or stomach was injured. He had no other means to check the other organs for now.

Even though he was hurt all over, Donford Wu still felt that he was incomparably lucky. The might of his opponent was too strong. With a slight flick of his wrist, he could easily break his bones with an arrow, that invisible pushing force unseen by the naked eye, and that bodily technique like a ghost, coming and going without a trace. To be able to keep his life after fighting with such an incredible opponent was the most fortunate thing to happen to him in all his unfortunate encounters.

Generally speaking, this kind of injury wouldn't be enough to strip him of moving. But right now, he just couldn't move. No matter what part his body he moved, there would a heart drilling pain. This was because when he was holding down his opponent, that invisible pushing force that tried to push him off cause his muscles, tendons and bones to be injured.

In a place without any medical facilities, lying down and not moving was the best way to heal. This is because the human body has a self-healing ability to a point, especially for muscles and tendons to reposition themselves.

A few minutes later, Yaara Ming came back. She couldn't find anyone to help, all the shamans that stayed here were all killed.

"I'll bring you to a room first."

In the midst of her frenzy, Yaara Ming calmed down. Reaching out, she tried to hold Donford Wu up.

"Yo, don't move me brah."

Donford Wu muttered. His breathing couldn't come naturally, he didn't dare speak loudly. But his tone was still firm.

"Hearing this, Yaara Ming instantly retracted her hands.

"Why is that?"

"Brah, like you don't know my bulging muscles will heal brah, I can get up with my swaggy muscles brah."

Donford Wu told her.

"You can't just lay here on the ground."

Yaara Ming once again reached out.

"Yo dude, I said don't move me. You messing up my swag brah."

Donford Wu raised his force. His words stimulated his lungs a lot, a cough tried to come out. He hurriedly suppressed it, coughing would only make his injuries worse.

"What is it?"

Yaara Ming finally discovered that something was wrong with Donford Wu's mood.

Donford Wu didn't reply. The reason why he came back to save her was because of a man's principle, deep in his heart, he was still angry at Yaara Ming.

"You're mad at me for not letting you in my room?"

Yaara Ming guessed the origin of his anger.

Donford Wu still didn't open his mouth.

Seeing him not speaking, Yaara Ming knew she guessed right.

"That really doesn't match our etiquette."

Yaara Ming said out to explain.

"Yo man, if you really cared about these bulging muscles of swag brah, then you wouldn't give a fuck about some shitty etiquette."

Donford Wu started to move his hands and feet.

"Let's talk about this later, let's go back to a room. I need to check your injuries."

Yaara Ming once again reached out.

"Yo man, you disrupting my flow brah."

Donford Wu stared angrily at her.

Seeing such a large reaction from Donford Wu, only then did Yaara Ming knew how serious this problem is. Before this, she thought that Donford Wu was just throwing a fit, but now, she knew that he was truly angry.

"Do you have external injuries?"

Yaara Ming noticed that the stains of blood on Donford Wu's chest didn't seem to come from spitting out blood.

Donford Wu didn't respond. Bending his knees and tilting his body, he slowly stood up. Seeing that he had such difficulty standing up, Yaara Ming tried to reach and support him. As a result, she only got another fierce glare.

Trying out a few steps, Donford Wu went back into the room to pick up his dagger, then, going back out again to find the pile of bamboo to search for his bow and arrows. The quiver was broken, the arrows were all around the ground, some of them were beast bones that were not quite grinded yet. Donford Wu picked all of them up, holding them in place under his arms.

"Where are you going?"

Yaara Ming blocked Donford Wu.

Donford Wu didn't say anything, going around Yaara Ming, he went towards the south. Even though he saved Yaara Ming, but his mood was even worse than before. In modern times, he was an outstanding soldier, extremely confident.

But coming here, he still didn't belittle himself, right until tonight did he find out that he wasn't outstanding in this period of time. The biggest reason why Yaara Ming choose him was because he accidentally saw her face.

"You're an adult, how can you have such a small temper?"

Yaara Ming painfully looked at Donford Wu who was having a hard time moving around.

Just like he did, Donford Wu didn't talk. In his mind was the last sentence he asked Yaara Ming before he planned to leave. He said he was suffering, asking if Yaara Ming cared or not. Yaara Ming choose to not care. No matter what position Yaara Ming stood on, he wouldn't understand.

Walking to the guardhouse, Donford Wu found his shoes. On the steps in front of the guardhouse, he put them on.

"If you really decided to leave, then why did you come back to save me."

Only now did Yaara Ming understand that when Donford Wu wanted to leave, did he discover that enemies have invaded.

Donford Wu stood up, walking out of the courtyard.

"It's my fault, I'm sorry, please, let's go back."

Yaara Ming followed him out and pulled on him.

"Yo man, it's not your fault, the fault is within my swaggy bulging muscles."

Donford Wu shook his head. He was unfamiliar with this time, he was unfamiliar with this city, he was unfamiliar with everyone, he was unfamiliar with everything here. To knock on Yaara Ming's door was his fault, because now, he wasn't the undefeated special forces lieutenant. Now, here, he was a normal civilian that couldn't cultivate the laws.

Seeing that Donford Wu insisted on leaving, Yaara Ming didn't dare to keep on pulling him, only following him forward.

"The city gates are closed right now, you can't go out. And anyways, you have injuries, you need to be treated as quickly as possible, don't go."

Yaara Ming tried to persuade him.

"Yo man, you can still see my bulging muscles, my swag won't YOLO brah, you can go back, I want to swag by myself here. Maybe when my swaggy mood calms down, I might go back to that place where all the people YOLOed.

"With these kind of injuries, where can you go?"

Yaara Ming helplessly felt pain in her heart.

Donford Wu didn't speak once again.

Because he had injuries on him, Donford Wu couldn't move quickly. Yaara Ming followed beside him, she kept on trying to persuade him the whole way.

Donford Wu didn't stop, after half an hour, he arrived at the city gates. The city gates were currently shut, and there wasn't any soldiers around. He couldn't open the gates himself, so he could lean against the city wall and sit down.

"Let's go back, whatever you says go, okay? I'll listen to whatever you want, okay?"

Yaara Ming knelt beside Donford Wu, trying to persuade him with a soft voice. Before this, she thought she understood Donford Wu very well. But today, she learnt his stubborn side. Coughing up blood twice on the way, his cold sweat covering all his cloths, he still didn't stop.

Donford Wu didn't respond, right now, he didn't even have the breath to speak out.

Yaara Ming continued to persuade him. In the middle of night, Donford Wu fainted once. Then, she tried to carry him back, but in the middle of it, Donford Wu suddenly woke up and refused her of it.

The next part of the night, the two didn't speak. Donford Wu didn't want to speak, didn't have the strength to speak. Yaara Ming was thinking back to what exactly she did wrong. She only did what most women would do in that situation, why would Donford Wu take this so deep within his heart.

The sky brightened, the city gates opened. Donford Wu relied on the city wall to stand up. Placing all his belongings under his arms.

"Don't be a child, follow me back. Dad is going to bring Food Dump back in a few days."

Yaara Ming tried to painstakingly persuade him. Food Dump was the only thing she could think of to change Donford Wu's decision.

Donford Wu turned back to look at Yaara Ming. After a moment he retracted his gaze, painfully walking out of the city gates.....

Chapter 24 Ginger is the Elderly's Spice

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-24/>

Chapter 24 Ginger is the Elderly's Spice

Yaara Ming helplessly sighed, slowly following him out.

"Even when you walk you're unsteady, where exactly do you want to go?"

Donford Wu didn't say anything. Enduring to this point was already his limit. His knees weak, arms heavy (TL NOTE: mom spaghetti). The originally flat road was curved in titled in his eyes, shaking from side to side.

Seeing this, Yaara Ming once again sighed out, following behind Donford Wu, she would pick up the arrows and beast bones that he would occasionally drop. At the same time, she prepared to help support him when he couldn't take it anymore.

Ten steps, hundred steps, a thousand steps. Yaara Ming was more and more surprised in fright. She didn't think with his heavy injuries that Donford Wu could forcefully endure the night and still continue walking. What more was that she didn't think that after he shakely walked so far, at last dropping all the things he carried, he still continued to stagger forward. At the same time of being boggled by Donford Wu's endurance, a deep feeling of regret came out from within her heart. Donford Wu's oil has been used, his light extinguished, but still continued walking. What supported him was his frightening endurance, and where that endurance came from was how he thought that he wanted to leave far, far away from her.

A thousand steps later, Donford Wu still continued on. While they were walking, they slowly deviated from the main road, walking towards the southern mountains. The mountain roads were hard to walk on, walking becoming even more difficult for him. At last, he still fell down, where he fell was inside a banyan forest.

A few steps south, there was a small creek. With his mind lost, already unable to work properly, he just followed his instinct to find water to drink.

Yaara Ming covered her face, crying in pain. She always thought after a long period of time secretly observing this man that she understood him like the back of her hand. Only now did she discover how seriously she underestimated his courage and endurance. Not only that, what pumped courage into him was love, and being refused, he turned and left. This wasn't because of some kind of emotional experience, but because his self-esteem was too strong. A man who has been with too many women would just thicken his skin and cling on, never would such person be so stubborn and leave.

Good, this is still good, he hadn't gone too far. If he really did go too far, he absolutely wouldn't be able to make it back.

Yaara Ming carried Donford Wu to the creek. Bowing her hands to feed him water. Because she was in too much of a hurry to feed him, his breathing became uneven. Donford Wu started to cough, the water fed to him and his blood all came spitting out.

Yaara Ming was anxious and her heart in pain. Without thinking about it too much, she sucked in water into her mouth. Putting her lips on his, she fed him. After more than a dozen times, making sure that Donford Wu wasn't dehydrated, started to examine his injuries. Donford Wu's injuries were far worse to what she thought. The arrow wound on his chest, you could clearly see the white sternum. Two of his ribs were broken, the ulna also broken on his right arm.

Determining Donford Wu's wounds. Yaara Ming picked him up again. As quickly as possible went towards the city. Arriving at the city gates, the soldiers taking guard there came to welcome her.

"Respected shaman, do you require any of our assistance?"

With the help of the soldiers, Donford Wu was sent back to Yaara Ming's room. At this time, the Gold clansmen already knew about the accident that happened yesterday night, all of them rushing over there. What they were there for was not to just watch, but to await assignments, to give help.

Setting broken bones, wrapping up wounds, boiling medicine and feeding it, this was all done while Donford Wu was unconscious.

As long as they were a shaman, no matter a low ranked shaman or a high

ranked Celestial Master, they all were nobility. Donford Wu's situation didn't allow careless moving. Thus, Yaara Ming sent soldiers to surround the courtyard, to prevent Earth clan Celestial Masters from coming over again.

The three shamans inside the tribe have all died yesterday night. Yaara Ming let loose a swift. The swifts of each tribe had different markings, only used when they were under assault and needed assistance. Once the capital saw the swift, they would immediately send people over to provide it.

After finishing up, Yaara Ming sat beside Donford Wu who was on top of the bed. The biggest problem she was facing right now was how to keep Donford Wu here. If she couldn't think of a good plan before he awoke, then he would surely leave.

What she should have said, what she could say, almost everything was spoken out yesterday, but Donford Wu still didn't have a change of heart. Saying it again wouldn't have any use. Looking at the unmoving Donford Wu on top of the bed, Yaara Ming was stuck without plan, a hundred feelings of sadness.

In the evening, a purple robed Celestial Master quietly arrived.

Seeing him, Yaara Ming started to cry while welcoming him.

The painful cries of Yaara Ming awoke Donford Wu. He faintly saw the Celestial Master that left yesterday, which was also Yaara Ming's father, who came walking towards him. Even though he was angry at Yaara Ming, but he still had respect for this elder. Seeing him come over, he hurriedly tried to stand up.

"Youngster, don't move."

The Celestial Master sat down on the side of the bed, helping Donford Wu lay down. Afterwards, he took up his wrist.

The feeling of sour, numb, pain and itch once again came out. Without asking the Celestial Master was using his Gold Qi to examine his injuries.

After dozens of seconds, the Celestial Master retracted his hand, opening up his robe, he unloosed a small yellow gourd. From inside, he took out a white pill and passed it next to Donford Wu's lips.

"Swallow it, three days later you'll be able to move as you wish."

"Thank you."

Donford Wu said his thanks but didn't swallow the pill.

Noticing something wrong with the atmosphere, a cloud of suspicious crossed through the Celestial Master's eyes. Titling his head to take a glance at Yaara Ming, then tilting his head back and stuffed the pill down Donford Wu's mouth. Yaara Ming hurriedly brought over a bowl filled with water to give to Donford Wu.

The Celestial Master sat down on the wooden chair next to the table.

"How many Celestial Masters came from their side?"

"I only saw two, one male, one female."

Yaara Ming responded.

"Details?"

The Celestial Master inquired.

"I'm not too sure, he knows more than me."

Yaara Ming put down the bowl and stood beside the Celestial Master.

"Youngster, how did you save her?"

The Celestial Master turned his gaze towards Donford Wu.

Donford Wu shook his head, not saying anything.

"What did you do to him after I left?"

The Celestial Master looked at Yaara Ming with a solemn expression.

"Nothing, nothing. You're just misunderstanding,"

Donford Wu said in embarrassment, continuing.

"Yesterday night, I was staying the night in this house and was the first to discover the invaders. They first killed the old man by the guardhouse, then searched through the rooms. Yaara Ming borrowed the room to the north west, which has the pile of bamboo in front of it. Discovering that there was an intruder going into Yaara Ming's room, I quickly went to help. They probably came to for the Celestial Master of the White Tiger you sent out during the day."

After seeing that the Celestial Master of the White Tiger wasn't here, they were in a hurry to leave, so after they knocked us down, they quickly left."

"I'll go take a look around."

The Celestial Master stood up and walked towards the outside.

"Dad, I'll take you around."

Yaara Ming stood up, following behind him.

"No need, stay here and take care of your husband."

The Celestial walked out the door with his hands behind his back.

Yaara Ming was shocked, Donford Wu too. The words of the Celestial Master was like a chisel in a rock, making sure of the two's not yet open relationship. Yaara Ming didn't understand why the always careful father would be so decisive of her relationship with Donford Wu. Donford Wu was also suspicious of this, he didn't understand why the Celestial Master would put so much trust and think so highly of him.

"What did your father give me to eat just then?"

Donford Wu asked. After swallowing the pill, he felt his whole body cleansed, his head clear, and the symptoms of his fever also suddenly vanishing.

"The Earth clan's healing pill."

Yaara Ming stated.

"The Earth clan's?"

Donford Wu was greatly surprised.

"Yes, it's the Earth clan's. Dad found it from the corpse of an Earth clan shaman."

Yaara Ming poured more water into the bowl, placing it in front of Donford Wu.

"Why doesn't the Gold clan refine their own pills?"

Donford Wu supported himself with his forearms, leaning on the head of the bed.

"We don't know how to, only the Earth clan knows how to refine them."

Yaara Ming seeing Donford Wu not drinking the water she brought for him helplessly sighed out.

Nodding his head, Donford Wu didn't ask anything else.

"What can I do so you will stay here?"

Yaara Ming painfully thought for the whole day but still didn't think of anything to make Donford Wu have a change of heart.

"I don't blame you for the things that happened yesterday. I was just reckless, but I can't just stay here forever. I would need to go out and see the world."

Donford Wu stated.

Hearing this, Yaara Ming's head darkened again. Saying this meant Donford Wu clearly wanted to separate from her.

Silence, silence which lasted longer than an hour came to pass before the Celestial stepped in.

The Celestial Master didn't speak out about what he saw, but walked over beside Donford Wu and patted his shoulder.

"This old man only has this one daughter. If there is someplace not good enough about her, then you'll only have to be tolerant for this old man."

"Nothing is wrong, nothing. She is great."

Donford Wu was extremely frightened.

"If Yaara Ming didn't disappoint you, then why did you head towards the courtyard gates last night with your bow and arrows?"

The Celestial Master smiled.

Donford Wu was once again in a daze, how could the Celestial Master know what he was doing last night?

"The speed they moved at was extremely quick, so if you didn't already have your bow and arrows at hand, then you wouldn't even have enough time to go back and take your weapons after discovering their traces."

The Celestial Master took the initiative to explain.

Donford Wu didn't have anything to say. Yaara Ming's father not only had amazing ways of controlling the laws, but also had an extremely acute observing power.

The Celestial Master once again told Donford Wu.

"If I didn't see incorrectly, yesterday night, before the Earth clan Celestial Master went into Yaara Ming's room, you released an arrow at him. The arrow you shoot at him was caught and thrown back, embedding itself into your sternum. After being hit, you didn't retreat but rushed into the room. Your broken ulna on your right hand should be caused by the first part of the fight. Afterwards, you used some kind of dangerous method to delay your opponent so that Yaara Ming had a chance to escape."

Donford Wu started at him, his tongue tied.

"This old man really wasn't wrong about you."

The Celestial Master patted Donford Wu's shoulder, turning around, he said towards Yaara Ming.

"I need to get back to the capital. I think that the invaders wouldn't think about coming again, but for safety, I'll recommend you two to leave as fast as you can."

"Thanks dad, I know."

Yaara Ming nodded her head to respond.

The Celestial Master slightly dipped his chin at Donford Wu, turning his body, he walked towards the door.

"Celestial Master, thank you for your pill."

Donford Wu seeing him go, hurriedly thanked him again.

The Donford Wu waved his hand.

"Dad, I'll send you off."

Yaara Ming followed him.

The Celestial Master titled his body to let Yaara Ming out first. Turning back, he

took a look at Donford Wu, casually pointing at the bolt of the door then walked out.

“Let’s go.”

The Celestial Master’s voice resounded from the outside.

“Dad, walk slower.”

Yaara Ming responded.

After a few minutes, Yaara Ming turned around to go back. Donford Wu was still looking at the bolt of the door in shock.

“What are you thinking about?”

Yaara Ming walked over.

“I need to go out for a bit.”

Donford Wu turned his body to get off the bed. With his movements too big, dizziness took over him.

Yaara Ming hurriedly took a step forward to support him.

“If you really want to leave, then I won’t stop you. But at least wait until your wounds heal before going.”

“I lost something, it might have fell out at the room you stayed at yesterday.”

Donford Wu forced himself to get off the bed.

“What thing, I’ll help you find it.”

Said Yaara Ming.

“It’s something I must go find myself, bring my shoes over.”

Donford Wu replied.

Yaara Ming couldn’t win him in stubbornness, so she could only go and help him put on his shoes. Holding a lamp, she brought him out the door.

The room Yaara Ming stayed in last night was kept the way it was. Donford Wu didn’t go searching around, but used the lamp light to study the bolt on the interior of the door. The door bolt was pretty similar to the bolts nowadays. Two copper rings set inside the door, one copper bolt inside them.

After close examination, he discovered that no matter the copper rings or the copper bolt was intact. Even the door was intact.

“What are you looking for?”

Yaara Ming’s voice came out by the fallen wall behind the room.

Donford Wu didn’t reply, he clearly remembered the first time he came, he banged on the door to knock. At that time, it was surely locked, if not, there was no need to bang on it, with just a slight push he could have opened it. The second time he came to save Yaara Ming, he seemed to not have felt a huge resistance. Adding to the bolt, copper rings and even the wood being intact, meant that the second time he rushed in, the bolt wasn’t in place.

“What is it?”

Yaara Ming went back into the room and looked suspiciously at the shocked Donford Wu.

“Your dad really is amazing.”

Donford Wu admired to how much effort the Celestial Master placed in his investigation. Not only could he find out what happened from just cobwebs of clues, but could guess from even more minute details on why he and Yaara Ming were fighting with each other yesterday night. What was even more incredible was that he could point out who was at fault. Dummy, my daughter left the door open for you, so you can’t blame anyone.

“Why do you say that?”

Yaara Ming asked, not understanding.

“Ginger is the elderly’s spice.”

Donford Wu walked towards the outside.

“Did you find what you needed?”

Yaara Ming asked.

“I did.”

Donford Wu smiled. He was wrong, wrong that he shouldn’t use a man’s thinking to guess about women. And he was still wrong with his face being too

thin, girls are shy, of course they would refuse him. At this time, he shouldn't have turned around to leave, but thicken his face and go in.

Yaara Ming nodded.

"You seriously injured me yesterday, so you should know where your faults are."

Donford Wu laughed.

"I really do regret it."

Yaara Ming still hasn't discovered the change in Donford Wu's attitude.

"For your dad, I won't make a fuss about this, but you have to repay me."

Donford Wu sneakily used his chance to get away with something.

"What do you want me to repay you with?"

Yaara Ming could feel that something was wrong, so she turned her head to look at Donford Wu.

"I haven't thought of anything yet, let's go back to the room, we'll talk then....."

Chapter 25 Same Bed

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-25/>

Chapter 25 Same Bed

With a heart filled with doubt, Yaara Ming helped Donford Wu back to the room “I’m thirsty, give me some water.”

Donford Wu laid on the bed acting like a lord.

Yaara Ming filled a bowl with water.

“My legs hurt, come over and help me massage them.”

Donford Wu once again ordered her.

Yaara Ming came over to massage his legs.

“Are you hungry?”

Yaara Ming said in a soft tone

“No.”

Donford Wu hid his laughing face, using his arms to support him up, he looked at Yaara Ming.

Yaara Ming already knew that Donford Wu was deliberately playing around with her and that he already extinguished his temper against her. But what she didn’t know was what caused him to suddenly calm down.

“Why didn’t you bolt the door yesterday night?”

Donford Wu asked.

“I didn’t bolt it?”

Yaara Ming’s face flushed.

“You didn’t, were you waiting for me?”

Donford Wu hurriedly inquired.

“How’d you know I didn’t bolt it?”

Yaara Ming's face turned even redder. Only now did she understand the real reason why Donford Wu went over to that room.

Donford Wu giggled and laid back down.

"Okay, I didn't bolt it on purpose, I was waiting for you. Are you going to force me to say it?"

Yaara Ming was a bit flushed.

"No, not at all. You've been busy all day, come and sleep."

Donford Wu patted the part of the bamboo bed towards the inside.

"I'll sleep on the floor."

Yaara Ming stood up and bolted the door.

"That can't do, you have to sleep on the bed."

Donford Wu cried.

Yaara Ming was instantly angry yet shy. She looked with a disapproving face at Donford Wu.

"Come, come."

Donford Wu gestured towards himself.

Yaara Ming couldn't laugh or cry. After a moment of hesitation, she blew out the lamp. Taking off her shoes and clothes, she laid on the inner part of the bed.

"What are you doing?"

"HeHe."

"Put your hand away."

"HeHe."

"How can you be like this?"

"How what?"

"Don't move, go to sleep."

"I slept all day, I'm not tired."

"If you keep doing this, I'm going to be angry."

"What anger are you going to lit up. You hurt me, you have to repay me."
"It was clear that it was your own temper. What kind of man has such a small temper like you? It's clearly your fault, and you are still asking me to repay you, take your hand off."

"Ouch."

"Where did you hit yourself? Is it serious.....Ah, you, how can you be bad?"

"Okay, okay, I won't move anymore."

"You're injured, stop playing around. We'll talk about this later when you're healed. Okay, listen to me, take your hand off. If you rip off the button then I won't be able to wear it tomorrow."

"....."

"I'm angry, I'm really angry now."

"How can you be angry? If it wasn't for me last night, then you would already be ruined by someone. I'm a hero saving a damsel, and beautiful one at that, in distress. You have to pay back with your body, understand?"

"How can there be such a person as shameless as you."

"What shameless, wasn't I just stating the facts?"

"If it's the facts then you don't need to say it out. So annoying, I'm going to ignore you."

"Turn around, turn back around this instant."

"Hmph."

"You aren't going to turn around huh? He He."

"Ah~"

"He He."

"Can you stop moving? I'm not prepared yet, and you're injured anyways."

"Relax, I lost too much blood, at the moment I can't do anything else. Hey, where are going? Come back, your dad told me to take good care of you, didn't you hear it."

"Ugh. Are all the men in your time all like this?"

"No, I'm rather good, I won't mess around."

"You call this not messing around."

"You're my wife, whatever I do doesn't count as messing around. Okay, okay, come back to sleep, I won't move."

"Swear on it!"

"Okay, I swear."

"....."

"You swore on it, be careful that the deities descending to smite you."

"I'm just touching and they are going to descend and smite me? If I wanted to do more, than wouldn't that mean they'll send lightning after me."

"What you are saying is blasphemy against the deities."

"They won't care about this kind of stuff."

"Listen to me, even if we're married we still have to respect each other like guests."

"If a couple respect each other like guests, then divorce is not far away."

"Fine, you win, do whatever you want."

"You should've said so earlier."

"Disgraceful."

"You're facing me with your back, I can only be disgraceful. If you turn around, I can promise to be graceful."

"You're obviously a gentleman, why would you be doing such disgraceful things?"

"Only false gentlemen don't do disgraceful things."

"Hey, don't lift my gown. If you keep on doing this, I'm going to break your left arm."

"Do it, hit me, hit me, if you don't break then I won't.....ow, it feels so good, ow....."

“Do you still dare?”

“No.”

“Hmph.”

“.....”

“Sigh.”

Donford Wu sighed out.

“What is it?”

Yaara Ming was still facing him with her back.

“I can’t cultivate the laws. Just in case that Celestial Master from the Earth clan comes again, how will I protect you?”

Donford Wu slowly shook his head.

“He won’t come back, the Earth clan is very far away from here.”

Yaara Ming turned around.

“He’ll definitely come, it’s just a matter of time.”

Donford Wu stated.

“He won’t find our village.”

Yaara Ming tried to comfort him.

“You’re just tricking yourself. If he really wanted to find you then he would definitely be able to. We have to think how to kill him, if not something would happen sooner or later.”

Donford Wu sat up and leaned on the wall behind the bed.

Yaara Ming sat up too. Even though she comforted Donford Wu, but deep in heart she was worried too. But their opponent was an Earth clan Celestial Master. Which meant that at most, her father was able to fight evenly with him, but what about Donford Wu, this ordinary person.

“You once said that shamans are split into three ranks and nine phases. I know what the three ranks are, Shaman, Sage and Celestial Master. What about the nine phases?”

“The nine phases of the shaman comes from ancient times. Which is, Upon Beginning, Upon False, Upon Mystery, Jaded Beginning, Jaded False, Jaded Mystery, Supreme Beginning, Supreme False, and Supreme Mystery. The Upon phases are Small shamans, Jaded phases are Middle shamans, Supreme phases are Grand shamans.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“Why is it called like that?”

Donford Wu curiously asked.

“To be more incredible than ordinary people is Upon. To be like the same as jade and has spirituality is Jaded. Supreme just means very great.”

Yaara Ming said.

“And what does Beginning, False, and Mystery mean?”

Donford Wu inquired.

“To be a bit higher means Beginning, False means the heavens, and Mystery points at the deities.”

Yaara Ming responded.

“This is the first time I heard of this, I know something like Upon Clarity, Jaded Clarity, and Supreme Clarity. That’s right, are there the three Clarities (Taoist thing) now?”

Donford Wu asked.

“I haven’t heard anything like that before.”

Yaara Ming shook her head in confusion.

“Is your dad a Supreme Beginning Celestial Master?”

Donford Wu asked. Yaara Ming once said that her mother was a bit weaker than her father and she was a Jaded Mystery Sage. Then that meant that her father should be a Supreme Beginning Celestial Master.

“That’s right. But in reality, no matter how big or small they are all shamans. Sages and Celestial Masters are just names that people bestowed upon us in respect.

“What level were the two shamans last night?”

Donford Wu asked.

Yaara Ming shook her head.

“I’m not too sure, but I can feel that they shouldn’t be too much above or below my dad.”

“Ah. It’ll be great if I had a gun (Qiang).”

Donford Wu bit his lips. If he had a gun in hand, fuck whatever Master, he’ll rattle tat tat them dead.

“We have spears (Qiang).”

Yaara Ming said.

Donford Wu froze, then after a moment he understood that the Qiang she was pointing at was not the Qiang he was talking about. He was talking about a submachine gun and she was talking about spears.

“No need to worry, did you forgot that we still had Food Dump?”

Yaara Ming stated.

“Food Dump can beat a Celestial Master?”

Donford Wu questioned.

“It can, the Bear Kings in the past could fight on par with Celestial Masters, and Food Dump is a Pi Xiu. After it grows up, it’ll be even more powerful than the Bear Kings of the past.”

Yaara Ming nodded her head brightly.

“At least there is some good news. But it seems like the little guy doesn’t seem to like to fight.”

Donford Wu shook his head stating.

“It’s still small, after growing up it won’t be like that.”

Yaara Ming said.

“The Inner Dan that the black bear spat out for Food Dump, was it taken away by that fucker of a person?”

Donford Wu asked.

"No. I still have it."

Yaara Ming said.

"Talking about Inner Dans, can you guys be like Food Dump and swallow an Inner Dan to quicken cultivation?"

Donford Wu asked.

"We can't directly ingest a beast's Inner Dan, we can only swallow Pills that have been refined. But we don't know how to refine Piils, and the Earth clan wouldn't refine any Gold Qi Pills that are suitable for us."

Yaara Ming shook her head saying.

"For the Earth clan shaman's to be so amazing, is it because they can refine Pills?"

Donford Wu asked.

"Not completely, their ways of controlling the laws have always been better than ours."

Yaara Ming stated.

"They recklessly suppress you guys, kill your children, murder your shamans, have you guys never thought of fighting back?"

Donford Wu inquired on.

Yaara Ming's mood instantly shot down.

"We don't even have a Celestial Master of the White Tiger, how can we fight back? Anyways, even if we do find the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, the deep ways of controlling the laws have been lost."

"Tolerating it will only help grow their crimes. After I'm better, I'll think of something for you guys."

Donford Wu said.

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

After a moment of silence, Yaara Ming said quietly.

“For some reason, I have a strange feeling.”

“I also have that strange feeling.”

Donford Wu grinned and reached out his hand.

Yaara Ming reached out to stop Donford Wu’s hand.

“I feel that you are the real Celestial Master of the White Tiger that the Gold Deity bestowed upon us.”

“Because I picked up Food Dump?”

Donford Wu laughed asking.

“Not only because of Food Dump, also the time you appeared. You only appeared this year. The main point is your endurance. I’ve never seen a person continue walking so far with injuries as serious as yours. This frightening endurance is not something that will show up in an ordinary person.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“Ha Ha, there’s no need to talk about these things, I’m not even pure Gold blooded, your dad shouldn’t have seen wrong.”

Donford Wu shrugged his shoulders.

“My dad really didn’t see incorrectly, you aren’t pure Gold blooded. But you have Gold, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth, all five bloods. Not only that, all of them are balanced. We haven’t encountered something like this before. Next time we see dad, I’ll have to ask him to convince Uncle Gabriel and Uncle Xavier to use Three Records Glimpse on you.”

Yaara Ming said.

“What’s Three Records Glimpse?”

Donford Wu asked, not understanding.

“A way of controlling the laws of our Gold clan. One record is twelve years, Three Records Glimpse can take a look at you twelve years in the future and past.

“It can see what I’m doing twelve years in the future and the past?”

Donford Wu half believed her half doubted her.

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

"This way of controlling the laws exhausts a lot of Gold Qi. It needs three Gold clan Celestial Masters to control the laws at the same time. And every time, we can only take a glimpse at an instant."

"How do they do that?"

Donford Wu didn't think he was the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, but was very curious about the Gold Clan's way of controlling the laws.

"I'm not sure, I only heard about this way of controlling the laws from mom when I was small, I never seen it with my own eyes before."

Yaara Ming shook her head.

Donford Wu sneezed.

"Sleep early, I'll let them carry you out tomorrow morning."

Yaara Ming said.

"If I can walk then I don't need anyone to carry me."

Donford Wu laid back down.

"Why are like this again?"

"How old are you?"

"Huh?"

"I'm asking how old are you?"

"Twenty four."

"Is that for real, you look more like twenty eight."

"Am I that old?"

"What month are you?"

"May."

"Okay, I'm born in June, you're older than me, so you have to let me do what I want."

"Shameless, hey, take your hand off.....

Chapter 26 Deities' Decree

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-26/>

Chapter 26 Deities' Decree

Donford Wu spent so much time to place his hand there, how could he be so easily willing to release it.

After a few rounds of struggles and refusals, Yaara Ming stopped moving.

Now that Yaara Ming has stopped struggling, it was his turn to be embarrassed. Awkwardly, he retracted his hand.

"I'm going to sleep, I won't joke around anymore."

Donford Wu slept in ease. Apart from his injuries and excessive tiredness, the main reason was because of the womanly scent that came from Yaara Ming's body, very clear, very light. This scent let men feel calm, allowing the restlessness in a man's body to go away.

When did Yaara Ming wake up, he didn't know. After waking up, he found Yaara Ming already packed up and was sitting on a chair next to the table, waiting for him to wake up.

Seeing him open his eyes, Yaara Ming carried over a copper basin.

"Wash your face, we're setting off."

Donford Wu didn't say anything, but looked directly at Yaara Ming. Even though Yaara Ming resisted yesterday, but he knew from her tone and actions that she treated it as playing around and liked it. But right now, what he saw on Yaara Ming was an inviolable seriousness.

"Get up."

Yaara Ming helplessly sighed out.

"My arms hurt."

Donford Wu smiled, Yaara Ming's seriousness was faked.

Hearing this, Yaara Ming hurriedly placed the basin down and carefully raised

his right arm. Inspecting, she confirmed that the wooden board to help set his bones in place hasn't moved.

"This."

Donford Wu raised his left arm, Yaara Ming bit him hard last night and even till now the bite marks still hasn't gone away.

"They're all waiting outside, stop playing around, how do you feel?"

Seriousness once again went back to Yaara Ming's face.

Donford Wu deeply breathed out, and found out that the areas where his broken bones were didn't hurt.

"I'm much better, I can walk by myself."

"Don't force yourself."

Yaara Ming said.

Donford Wu then checked the wound on his chest and discovered it already became a scar. After a day and night of rest, the sour and pain on his body already went away by a half.

"What mainly affects my movement is my two broken ribs, if they don't hurt, I can walk."

"Don't talk anymore, it isn't early anymore, get up and let's go."

Yaara Ming passed over a soaked towel. This towel wasn't like those made of one hundred percent cotton nowadays, the towels here were made of linen.

Donford Wu sat up and took the towel, right now he had injuries so he didn't dare bend his back. After two splashed he finished things and followed Yaara Ming out the door.

Not far away sat those few villagers. Seeing Donford Wu coming out the door, they hurriedly carried over a bamboo rack.

Donford Wu tried out a few steps. Confirming he could walk, he refused their good intentions.

"No, lay down."

Yaara Ming's tone didn't allow any back talk.

Donford Wu just pretended not to hear it and started walking first. The Pill that the Celestial Master gave him yesterday night was really effective. As long as he didn't move too quickly, his wounds wouldn't hurt.

The sages that escorted Food Dump also came back. Even though they didn't come to send them off themselves, but sent people over to give them some rations. Everyone holding the rations, they went out of the city and set off.

The villagers happily walked in the front. The child they escorted was determined to be the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, this was an extremely glorious matter. They even used the shells that Yaara Ming gave them to buy things for their wife and children. Right now, they urgently wanted to give them these gifts.

"What's your dad's name?"

Donford Wu and Yaara Ming walked at the back

"Charles (Zhen)."

Yaara Ming as per usual didn't say the surname.

"Why do you all have two character names? Are there any with three characters?"

So that he didn't put pressure on his ribs, Donford Wu walked with his chest out and his head up.

"There is, but not a lot. If you're tired then speak out. You have injuries so don't forcefully endure it."

Yaara Ming stated.

"You're clearly worried about me, why do you have to such a droopy face, you're making everything so sad and boring."

Donford Wu bit his lips

Yaara Ming took a glance at him, then quickened her pace to follow the men at the front.

With outsiders by his side, Donford Wu couldn't just say anything he wanted.

Not long after, he laid on the rack. He could still continue on by himself, but he didn't feel the need to.

The feeling of being carried around wasn't bad, swaying around, he quickly fell asleep.

At night, the crowd stayed at a wooden house next to the road. The wooden house was a resting place for people transporting ores. A lot of villages used it together. The people nowadays all had public morals. If they broke something, they would fix it, if they made a hole they would fill it, before they leave, they would tidy up the place for hygiene.

With the past experience, Yaara Ming didn't sleep in the same room as him. Donford Wu himself stayed at one of the wooden houses. The flies in the mountains were numerous, after a while of biting he couldn't take it anymore and ran out to chat with the men outside. These people knew what relationship he had with Yaara Ming, so they chatted quite closely.

The south side had great humidity. The men all liked drinking a few mouthfuls and going to soak in the air for a bit. Before leaving the tribe, they all bought a large jar of alcohol that they carried on their backs. Thinking to slowly drink it while walking back. Since they chatted quite happily with Donford Wu, they offered Donford Wu some.

Men couldn't drink together, especially a group of them, they would definitely drink too much. All six jugs were finished, a few men collapsed on the ground. The alcohol didn't affect Donford Wu at all, this was not because he had a large drinking capacity, but because the alcohol now was all made of corn and ripe fruit that was fermented, so it didn't have much of an alcohol content. Drinking it, it tasted like a fruity beer.

Even if it's all fruity beer, if you drank a lot you would have a muddled mind. Donford Wu used his drunken self to go knock on the door. Discovering that he made all the men collapse from drunkenness when she opened the door, and finding that Donford Wu face was flushed, she angrily shut the door. No matter what Donford Wu called out, she wouldn't open it.

Even though he acquired Yaara Ming's hate, but at least he built a good relationship with the men. The second day, a few men fought to carry him,

Donford Wu pretended to be drunk and slept on the rack.

The first day he was carried, the second day he also was carried. The third day he also wanted to be carried, but too bad his wounds were healed, so he had to walk himself.

The children of the village was first to discover them. With shrieks they sent out the message. The wifes all came to welcome them. Seeing that Yaara Ming had took off her mask, they knew she found someone she liked and all congratulated her. And then the men all loudly told the women and children that their fortunate surviving baby was the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, this made the whole village go in a frenzy.

Donford Wu discovered that Walda Ming was in the congratulating crowd. He then squeezed himself into the crowd to talk to her. Walada Ming seeing him come back and had acquired the shaman's love happily congratulated him. She invited Donford Wu to go to her house to have lunch, Donford Wu happily said yes.

Coming back, Yaara Ming also started to be busy. She sent someone to tell the men in the mines to stop working for a day and needed to find someone to go with that baby's father to go the capital to reunite with his family. After careful thought, she sent the arm less man. This person knows martial arts and even knew the road to the capital. But the main reason was that this person and Donford Wu didn't have a good relationship. For following her for so long, she decided to send him on his way to the capital to enjoy this fortunate matter with the fake Celestial Master of the White Tiger's family.

After finishing up, she discovered that Donford Wu was gone. Only after asking did she know that he was eating cured meat with Walda Ming.

Knowing where Donford Wu went, Yaara Ming didn't go find him. She privately observed Donford Wu for a long time, so she knew that what he felt to Walda Ming was mainly gratitude and compassion. If he really did have thoughts of Walda Ming, then he would have already tried his hand before.

Before setting off, Donford Wu left Walda Ming a lot of meat. After curing it for these few days, the meat wasn't salty or tasteless and just right. Donford Wu and Walda Ming's family all ate a huge slab of deliciousness, the only thing that

was missing was alcohol.

After eating lunch, Donford Went back to the cave he lived in. He choose to continue to stay here because he didn't like staying with the villagers. And because after some time, Yaara Ming's father, Charles Ming would be bringing Food Dump back. They couldn't let the villagers know of Food Dump's existence, if not, the news would spread like wildfire.

The cave was very neat and tidy, without asking, after he left, Walda Ming once carefully cleaned the place.

After finishing up the village's matters, Yaara Ming came over, giving Donford Wu a mattress, blanket and utensils to eat and drink from.

Making his bed and placing the utensils, Yaara Ming went ot the cave entrance, sitting down on the other side of Donford Wu.

"I have something to discuss with you."

"What is it?"

Donford Wu currently grinding bone arrows.

"I want to find a husband for Walda Ming."

Yaara Ming stated.

Hearing this, DOnford Wu stopped grinding and tilted his head to look at Yaara Ming.

"You're misunderstanding, I know that Walda Ming helped you before, I was just thinking how to repay her."

Yaara Ming said.

"Are there any suitable candidates?"

Donford Wu once again started grinding.

"I'm not too sure, you can ask who she likes. As long as he doesn't have a wife, I can make it come true."

Yaara Ming responded.

"If she likes someone, that doesn't mean that someone would like her back."

Donford Wu shook his head.

"That won't happen, as long as I speak out, they would surely happily marry Walda Ming."

Yaara Ming stated.

Donford Wu once again stopped what he was doing, looking at Yaara Ming with a nonunderstanding look.

"Don't forget, I'm a shaman, shamans are the messengers of the deities. What I say is the deities' decree."

Yaara Ming laughed.

"What you are doing is blasphemy against the deities."

Donford Wu smiled.

"What I'm doing is called helping your benefactor."

Yaara Ming also smiled

"Okay, I'll go ask here."

Donford Wu nodded his head then started to grind his bone arrows again.

Yaara Ming originally wanted to chat with Donford Wu, but as a result, she discovered that when Donford Wu started working, he didn't have the mind to take away from it, all his heart was into grinding the bone arrows. The talks with her was all mostly one sided. With her mood down, after waiting a moment she left.

Coming back to the village, there were things that weren't convenient. Yaara Ming's house was in the middle of the village, being found out in the middle of the night wasn't too good. And Yaara Ming only came to the cave in the day, when he starts to be naughty, Yaara Ming would immediately run away.

But he didn't just stay in the cave these few days, there was a little fellow that had feelings for Walda Ming, but afterwards, since she was too close to him, he was a bit sour and didn't care for her. After determining the candidate, it was Yaara Ming's turn. Hearing that it was the deities' decree, the little fellow instantly happily married Walda Ming. Yaara Ming and Donford Wu gave them a

generous gift. A small copper pot, saying it accurately, it was called a cauldron. In the days of cooking with pottering, this was an all-out generous gift.

After Walda Ming gotten married, she didn't come back to the cave. Her new husband had an extremely small heart, and was easily jealous. So she had to avoid suspicion as best as she could.

Donford Wu became bored with nothing to do. He grinded all the remaining beast bones, in total sixteen bone arrows.

Finishing grinding the bone arrows, he borrowed a shovel from the village. Going to the middle of the mountain to burry Food Dump's mother. At this time, it was already the eighth day since leaving the tribe, the Celestial Master still hasn't come back.

But what Charles Ming said that day was at least seven days and at most half a month. It was only eight days, so there wasn't anything out of the ordinary.

After half a month, Charles Ming still hasn't come over. Yaara Ming and Donford Wu started to become nervous.....

Chapter 27 The Gold Clan's Counter Attack

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-27/>

Chapter 27 The Gold Clan's Counter Attack

"Dad has always been on time, why isn't he here yet?"

Yaara Ming stood outside the cave, facing the east.

"He escorted Food Dump and that child to the capital, then went back to the tribe. After that, he went back to the capital, it all needs time. Wait a bit more, don't be so anxious."

Donford Wu stated.

"From that day, it has already been half a month. The sun is almost going down the mountain, if you count today, it'll be the seventeenth day."

Yaara Ming shook her head.

Donford Wu knew what Yaara Ming was worrying about.

"You don't need to be so excessively worried. Your father and the other two Celestial Masters would definitely be able to hide that child and Food Dump in a safe place. Even if the Earth clan wants to move, they wouldn't be able to find their targets. Without finding their targets, then there won't be any direct conflict."

It was clear that his words were used for comforting. Yaara Ming walked back a few steps and sat on top of a boulder outside the cave.

"Except for this kind of thing, then what could be delaying dad?"

To this point, Donford Wu had no way to continue on. He didn't even know where the Gold clan's capital was, how could he know what was happening in the capital. But there was something he could be certain of, which was Charles Ming must have been delayed by a prickly problem, if not, he definitely wouldn't have been late. He must have known that if he was late, his daughter would be extremely worried.

To ease Yaara Ming's concern, Donford Wu opened up another topic.

"That's right, I always wanted to ask you, since your parents both live in the capital, then why would you be sent out to this secluded village?"

"Too much drama in the capital."

"Is your brother also in a far-away village?"

Donford Wu inquired on.

Yaara Ming shook her head, not replying.

Just when Donford Wu was thinking of what to ask next, Yaara Ming suddenly stood up and ran towards the mountain top.

Donford Wu ran out of the cave, only seeing Yaara Ming was currently standing on top of the mountain and waving her hand towards the north western side. Faintly, he could see a black dot in the sky closing in from the east western side.

Following the person getting closer, Donford Wu discovered that person was Charles Ming. In Charles Ming hand he held an egg shaped bamboo cage. The cage was broken, you could see Food Dump's head that stuck out.

After tens of seconds, Charles Ming arrived, picking up his copper pole, he dropped down outside the cave.

Donford Wu didn't know the proper courtesies of these times. Hesitating on how to greet him, Yaara Ming first went up to welcome him.

"Dad, why are you so late?"

Charles Ming smiled and nodded at Donford Wu, putting down the bamboo cage, he told Yaara Ming.

"I went to take care of some matters."

Food Dump crawled out of the missing part of the bamboo cage. The amount of fright the little guy went through wasn't small at all, coming out it had a dazed and confused expression on its face. Seeing Donford Wu, it immediately ran towards him. Donford Wu reached out his hands, wanting to hug him, but Food Dump quickly dodged and ran into the cave, climbing into the rock encirclement to hide.

“Dad, what happened?”

Yaara Ming flicked her sleeves to sweep away the dust on top of boulder, inviting her father to sit down.

After sitting down, Charles Ming didn’t respond to Yaara Ming’s question, but rather asked back.

“That night, were you two able to see how the male shaman looked like?”

“He was covering his face.”

Yaara Ming shook her head.

Charles Ming turned to look at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu tried his best to remember.

“His hair was graying, the hair pin that was keeping his hair together was green. Eyebrows a bit thin. His body also had a strange scent. He was rather fat, his height could reach my cheekbones, his voice sounded like he should be around thirty five to forty.”

“Exactly him!”

Charles Ming praised Donford Wu, nodding his head.

“Dad, what exactly happened?”

Yaara Ming hurriedly inquired.

“Let me slowly explain things to you.”

Charles Ming raised his hand, indicating for Yaara Ming to not be so anxious.

Donford Wu turned around back into the cave. Food Dump was currently standing in the rock encirclement looking around. Seeing him come in, it hurriedly hid its head.

Donford Wu painfully bit his lips, seeing Food Dump like this meant that he had been tossed around no small amount. To raise the spirits of the soldiers, to tour around the capital wasn’t something Food Dump could evade. It was still small, this kind of noisy occasion must have frightened it. And before coming here, it was flown by Charles Ming, for it not to pee itself was already hard enough.

Waiting until Donford Wu got his water can, Charles Ming already started his story. That day, they moved quickly, and didn't meet any obstacles so they smoothly arrived at the capital. Just when they arrived, there was someone at the tribe that Yaara Ming stayed at that released a swift. He was worried about Yaara Ming, so he didn't stop his pace and immediately rushed back to the tribe, then once again went back to the capital. The large scale celebration had already started by then. The following few days, he and the other two Celestial Masters were like shadows of the baby and Food Dump, always protecting them. Once the celebration ended, they immediately moved the baby and Food Dump to a safe and unknown location.

Next, the other two Celestial Masters protected the baby, and he went out to start finding a Pi Xiu that looked like Food Dump. This trip wasted him seven or eight days, waiting until he found a replacement for Food Dump, and getting ready to send Food Dump back, a messenger from the Xia Dynasty arrived.

The messenger brought no small amount of gifts, and even brought the decree of the Xia Emperor, decreasing the Gold clan's tributes by twenty percent for this year. There were two main reasons for doing this. One was to show congratulations on the appearance of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, the second was to show condolence for the massacre of the babies.

Following this, the messenger suggested to greet the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, the Gold King agreed, but the three Gold clan Celestial Master disagreed. This time, the Earth clan brought shamans with them, once they were close to the child, they would immediately find out the child was fake. But they couldn't say this to the Gold Kind, and could only borrow an excuse, for the safety of the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, to refuse the messenger's request.

One couldn't see him, one wouldn't allow to see him, making both parties extremely unhappy.

But no matter how unhappy you were, if they didn't let you meet the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, then you couldn't do nothing. At last, the messenger put forward another request, saying that it was the Xia Emperor's decree. Marriage, and it pointed out that they wanted his daughter. The male side was named Jack Yun (Jiao), the nephew of the monarch of the Xia Dynasty, and the

disciple of the Earth Clan's Celestial Master Henry Xuan (Huang), which was also the Earth Clan Celestial Master that came with the messenger.

"Did you agree to this Dad?"

Yaara Ming's expression dramatically changed.

"With only a glance I could see that he had something horrible on his mind, so I refused. I told them, you already took off your mask at the Granite Tribe, and all the citizens there saw you. Taking off the mask meant you already have a husband, and if you have a husband, how can you marry someone else (TL: With a reverse harem)."

Charles Ming responded.

"How did they react?"

Yaara Ming nervously inquired. Since they raised this request, if they couldn't reach their goal they wouldn't rest.

"They insisted that it was the Xia Emperor's decree, no matter if you have a husband or not, you must marry Jack Yun. They said they will be taking you next month. The Gold King was afraid of angering them, and urged me to follow the decree, I could only answer with a yes then."

Charles Ming told her.

The words of Charles Ming directly sent Donford Wu to the South Pole.

"Your daughter will never marry someone else, he wouldn't even be able to have my corpse."

Yaara Ming angrily cried out.

"Answering them is not our decision, if they want to marry you is their decision."

Talking to this point, Charles Ming tone became cold.

"But a dead person can't marry anyone."

Donford Wu came back from the South Pole.

"Dad, you're planning on killing him?"

Yaara Ming suppressed her voice.

“Not planning, but already killed him. They left the borders of the Gold clan at noon. In the afternoon, we showed them our hand.”

Charles Ming’s nose slightly twitched.

“Including the whole messaging party with Jack Yun inside.”

Charles Ming didn’t finish, but Donford Wu and Yaara Ming both knew what he skipped out on. Charles Ming and they slaughtered the whole messaging party.

“Dad.....”

After the shock, Yaara Ming started to become afraid, she clearly knew what was going to be the result of this.

Charles Ming raised his hand.

“This matter was decided after all three of us discussed it, and it wasn’t all because of you. The Earth Clan has gone over the line, if we still don’t show them something, they will cross the line ever more. Anyways, the main reason they came was to confirm if our Celestial Master of the White Tiger was real or not. Since we refused them from meeting the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, they have already started to suspect that the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was fake. If we let them bring this news back, would be even worse for us. Why not just kill all of them and show the courage and bottom line of the Gold clan to the Earth clan.”

“Dad, they.....

Charles Ming once again stopped Yaara Ming in the middle of her sentence.

“We didn’t leave a single hair of ours, even if they knew they were killed by us, they wouldn’t have any direct evidence. And anyways, we already suspect that before the Earth clan sent this messaging party, they were already prepared for them to be killed by us beforehand. The messaging party should be the Earth clan’s real pawn to test us.”

“And it also could be an excuse to start a war.”

Donfod Wu cut in next to them.

Charles Ming nodded at Donford Wu. Standing up, he held his hands behind him and looked at the open air mine at the north western side. Even though it was already dark, the men of the village were still working.

"We have endured for too long. Taking insults and bearing heavy burdens didn't exchange peace, the only things our tributes exchanged were embarrassment and suppression. No matter what is the result of this resistance, we are willing to bravely face them."

"Dad, I have important that I need to talk to you about."

Yaara Ming walked over to Charles Ming's side.

Charles Ming turned his back to look at his daughter.

"He is the real Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

Yaara Ming pointed at Donford Wu, speaking in a serious tone.

"That's only your guess, I'm not the Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

Donford Wu hurriedly stood up.

"The first time I saw him, he was angry at you, blaming you that you went to ask someone a favor for him. At that time, I knew he was a youngster with good morals, but you must know, he isn't a pure Gold blood."

Charles Ming shook his head.

Only now did he know why Charles Ming treated him with such respect. It was because he shouted at Yaara Ming, blaming her that she went out to get a favor for him. This matter was seen by Charles Ming. No father would be willing to let his daughter follow and useless wimp.

"Dad, I have something to show you."

Yaara Ming turned around and walked towards Donford Wu. Taking out the dagger on his waist, she passed it over to Charles Ming.

Charles Ming reached out to take it, inspecting it carefully. There was a part missing on the backside of the dagger because Food Dump bit it.

"Dad, he isn't one of us, he comes from the skies. He always carried this dagger, and when he was injured I once took a detailed look at it. This is a kind of

metal we haven't seen before, it can't be controlled by us and it's not crude metal."

Yaara Ming stated.

After careful inspection and examination, Charles Ming's faced revealed a doubtful expression.

Yaara Ming turned around and once again walked towards Donford Wu, pointing at the positioning device on his wrist.

"Give me your bracelet."

"What do you want to do?"

Donford Wu didn't want to take it off, it couldn't tell his position, but it could still be used as a watch.

Seeing that he didn't take it off, Yaara Ming reached out with her own hands. Finding the snapping part, she took away the positioning device.

"Dad, look."

Yaara Ming passed the positioning device to Charles Ming.

Charles Ming turned his head around, following the movement of his gaze, the positioning device left Yaara Ming's palm and floated upwards. Following this, it quickly disassembled, after a few seconds it turned into a pile of small components.

"We're the best at refining metals, but we can't make these kinds of things, dad, trust me, he is our Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

Yaara Ming told him

Charles Ming frowned while examining these strange shaped components, not saying anything.

"You said it before too, he has five different kinds of blood, have you ever seen this kind of situation before?"

Yaara Ming spoke out.

Charles Ming still didn't say anything.

"That night, when he was being stubborn with your daughter, he still firming went to leave with heavy injuries. Walking to the city gates by himself, he sat there for a whole night. The next day, he could actually still stand up, only after walking out the city for four or five kilometers did he faint....."

Donford Wu was greatly embarrassed, secretly pulling on her clothes to try to stop her from going on.

Yaara Ming didn't care and continued.

"Dad, you once said, without endurance you can't do anything. He is the person that I have seen with the largest amount of endurance all my life."

Charles Ming assembled back the positioning device, giving it back to Donford Wu.

Taking it back, Donford Wu took a glance at it, discovering the clock stopped working. Without asking, he knew that when Charles Ming reassembled the device, he put things in the wrong order and position.

"Dad, I want you to invite Uncle Gabriel and Uncle Xavier to use Three Records Glimpse on him to see what the situation twelve years later in his life is."

Yaara Ming told him.

Charles Ming held his hands behind his back, titling his head up to look at the night sky.

"I just noticed them through divine transmission, they will be coming over shortly. As for using the Three Records Glimpse, we'll have to decide after they arrive....."

Chapter 28 The Truth Comes Out

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-28/>

Chapter 28 The Truth Comes Out

“Dad, you must convince Uncle Gabriel and Uncle Xavier.”

Yaara Ming spoke out.

“The Three Records Glimpse is no trivial matter, if they aren’t willing to practice their laws, then I won’t try to try to persuade them.”

Charles Ming shook his head.

“Why not?”

Yaara Ming asked, not understanding.

Charles Ming didn’t respond.

“Celestial Master, may I ask if you will need to pay a huge price if you use the Three Records Glimpse?”

Donford Wu asked. According to Charles Ming tone, it wasn’t hard to see. This Three Record Glimpse most very likely would could damage on themselves. Charles Ming retracted his gaze and turned around to smile at Donford Wu.

“No matter what price we have to pay, as long as it is worth it, we are willing to pay any kind of price.

“Quickly tell your situation to dad.”

Yaara Ming urged him.

Charles Ming waved his hand.

“We aren’t in a hurry, they’ll arrive by midnight, let’s wait until everyone is here before talking.”

Donford Wu responded with a nod. Walking to a pile of dried leaves and firewood, he lit the campfire. After lighting the fire, he immediately pocketed the lighter, he couldn’t let Yaara Ming take anything away.

While he was heating water, Charles Ming and his daughter were having small talk. Most of the time, it was Yaara Ming who spoke, and what she spoke about what happened when he appeared and what happened afterwards.

Food Dump sacredly crawled over, Donford Wu reached out and pulled it in to his embrace. Caressing its back to comfort it.

Food Dump was still small and liked being hugged, it also liked being stroked by Donford Wu. Silently rolling into a ball, it started sleeping.

When the water reached a suitable temperature, Donford Wu filled a bowl each for Charles Ming and Yaara Ming. Charles Ming nodded his head in appreciation.

When Donford Wu went over to pour water, Food Dump followed. When he went back, it followed. Waiting until Donford Wu sat back down next to the fire, it “Hn”ed and drilled into Donford Wu’s embrace. Donford Wu pushed out, it pushed back it. You push me, I push back, playing with Donford Wu.

Playing with excitement, Food Dump started to open its mouth and biting, but it knew not to go overboard, and was only playing around, not using much strength.

After chatting for around half an hour with her father, Yaara Ming went over to sit beside Donford Wu.

“When Uncle Gabriel and Uncle Xavier arrive, you can’t hid anything.”

“The Three Records Glimpse you talked about, it seems to bring a large amount of harm to them. You can’t determine that I’m the Celestial Master of the White Tiger just because I’m from four thousand years in the future. The Celestial Master of the White Tiger is pure Gold blooded, I’m not.”

Donford Wu stated

“You are or not, we’ll see.”

Yaara Ming told him.

“If I’m not, then how will I account for their losses?”

Donford Wu biting his lips, looked upon the not so distant Charles Ming who was standing up gazing at the far away stars.

"What you must do is try to persuade them with me."

Yaara Ming looked directly at Donford Wu.

"What you're doing is using emotion to get what you need."

Donford Wu helplessly shook his head.

"I believe in you, and I believe in it."

Yaara Ming pointed at the Food Dump stuffed between them.

"But what if I really am not, then what ever happens to them will be all my fault."

Donford Wu carried Food Dump over to his right side. This little ball of rice was originally on the right side. When Yaara Ming came over, it stuffed itself between them. But this wasn't because it wanted to play with both of them, but rather it sounded out nasal sounds to warn her. What it wanted to say was, this playmate is mine, you, go away.

"If someone tries to hurt me, then what will you use to protect me?"

Yaara Ming used her words to try to encourage Donford Wu.

"Okay, okay. Since they're already on their way, I can only just harden my face and do it."

While Donford Wu was speaking, he was distracted because he was playing with Food Dump.

"That's a good boy."

Yaara Ming smiled.

"Oh yeah, is that Jack Yun the nephew of the Xia Emperor or his wife?"

Donford Wu asked.

"The Xia Emperor's nephew."

Yaara Ming stated. At this time, there wasn't much difference in the pronunciation of the nephew of the man or woman (Chinese people separate this).

"Then shouldn't his surname be Si, why is it Yun?"

Donford Wu doubtfully asked. Even though when he went to school, he didn't like history, but he could still get a pass. Si was the surname of Yu the Great (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yu_the_Great), everyone who has the surname Si are all the descendants of Yu the great, which also meant royalty. But the first emperor, Emperor Xuan Yuan wasn't surnamed this but rather he was surnamed Xia.

"The Xia Emperor right now is Zayn (Zhuo), his surname is Yun."

"Who is Zayn? He isn't Yu the Great's descendent?"

Even though Donford Wu passed history, but it was still just a pass.

"No he isn't, he was originally a citizen of Han, then following the betrayal of the Yi(Yi) Hou, Zayn was able to kill him becoming the Xia emperor."

Yaara Ming replied.

"Was Yi Hou the person who shot down the nine suns in the sky (Chinese legend)?"

Donford Wu was a bit confused.

"How can the sky have so many suns, even if there is only two, then everyone would already be burnt to death, Yi is an archer, Hou means a king. What Yi Hou means is a person who are incredible at shooting arrows. Anyone who shoots arrow are all called Yis, and if they are amazing at it, then people will call him Yi Hou."

(TL Note: just going to change things into Archer King from this point on) Yaara Ming patiently explained.

"So the Earth clan was taken away by a rebel. Why didn't the shamans of the Earth clan not kill this rebel?"

Donford Wu questioned.

"Without the support of shamans, Zayn wouldn't have been able to become the Xia Emperor."

Yaara Ming told him.

"You're right. Tell me when did the Archer King betray and tell me more about

this Zayn guy.”

Donford Wu stopped moving his hands to play with Food Dump. Food Dump wasn’t stupid, discovering that he played with it with such little effort, its playfulness waned out so it walked away.

What Yaara Ming told him was very brief, and he also didn’t ask for more. He wasn’t all that interested in these matters. The only reason he asked was to confirm what period of time he was in, very quickly he got his answer. After four generations of the country of Xia, its fifth Xia Emperor only had dining and lust on his mind, and also liked going around the country, saying it simply he was corrupted. That was why the Archer King killed him while he was traveling, becoming the Xia Emperor himself. Then, the Archer King also became corrupted, the fellow that followed beside him while he was rebelling, who was Zayn, killed the Archer King.

“With all the drama there, why didn’t you guys get a piece of it?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Why would we participate in it?”

Yaara Ming frowned, asking back.

“If the Xia Emperor was still a descendent of Yu the Great, then you guys surely wouldn’t have to pay so much tribute.”

Donford Wu took out his water can and drank a few mouthfuls.

Yaara Ming laughed, not continuing the conversation.

“Why is your dad always staring at the sky tonight?”

Donford Wu questioned.

“The Three Records Glimpse might have relations with the Big Dipper.”

Yaara Ming responded. With her father’s angle of observation, she could roughly guess what he was looking at.

Donford Wu sneezed. With his watch broken, he didn’t know what time was it.

Before he could finish sneezing, two elderly people wearing purple robes suddenly appeared not too far away at the south side. If not for the clothing of a

Celestial Master and the copper pole in their hands, and with just this kind strange way of appearing, Donford Wu thought he was looking at ghosts. Of these two people, one was tall and skinny the other short and fat. The tall and skinny stick was taller than one meter ninety, his weight not exceeding fifty kilograms. The fat and short ball was only one meter fifty. His weight should be above one hundred kilos, his arms were short and so was his feet. With both of them standing side by side was like a living "10".

Their two ages were both older than Charles Ming a bit, around seventy years old. The expression of the stick was more serious while the ball was more kind.

Seeing the two appear, Yaara Ming happily went over to welcome down, her knees about to kneel to them.

"No need."

After the stick finished, he turned his head to look at Charles Ming.

"What is it?"

"We already said no need."

The ball used his copper pole to stop Yaara Ming from kneeling.

"Uncle Xavier, after a few years, you gotten fatter."

Yaara Ming laughed.

"What few years, it's clearly more than ten."

The ball started counting his fingers.

While the ball and Yaara Ming were speaking, Charles Ming already brought the stick to Donford Wu. Waiting until the two got closer, Donford Wu cupped his hands, shaking it to the stick. He wasn't sure if cupping his hands was right or wrong, but he knew for sure shaking hands wasn't right answer.

"Test his blood."

Charles Ming said to the stick.

The stick looked at Donford Wu, frowning, then reached out to grab his wrist.

The sour, numb, painful, and itchy feeling came out once again, Donford Wu was already use to it.

"How can he have a balance of all five bloods?"

The stick was greatly surprised, if the clansmen married different clans for five generations, then there would be five different kinds of blood, but there would be different ratios of the five types of blood. It wasn't possible for all five to be perfectly balanced.

"The reason why I called you two over was to find out the reason."

Charles Ming stated.

"What five bloods, let me have a try."

The ball walked over, curiously grabbing Donford Wu's wrist.

"How is this possible?"

The ball reveled the same expression as the stick.

"My two uncles, he is the Celestial Master of the White Tiger that the Gold Deity bestowed upon us."

Yaara Ming told the two.

After Yaara Ming finished talking, the two frowned at the same time.

"Donford, tell dad and the uncles where you came from."

Yaara Ming looked at Donford Wu.

Seeing the situation, Donford Wu knew he wasn't able to not say it, so he started from the beginning, first saying his identity, then talking in more detail. Next talking about discovering Food Dump, and at last talking about what happened after he arrived in this period.

After more than an hour, he finally finished telling his story, including Charles Ming, all three of them were standing there in amazement.

Yaara Ming also took Donford Wu's dagger and positioning device, passing them over to the stick and ball.

After the two finished investigating them, their faces revealed a very eerie expression. This kind of strange situation actually had evidence.

To make sure that Donford Wu didn't lie, Yaara Ming also took off his body

armor. Even though they didn't understand it after looking at it, but their trust reached around half.

Seeing this, Donford Wu secretly celebrated that he didn't arrive to this time naked.

Yaara Ming also told the time and place he appeared to convince the stick and ball. He appeared within the borders of the Gold clan, not long after, the Earth clan came to kill babies. Since the Earth clan sent out two Celestial Master to continue to try to kill and then sent a messaging party to test them meant the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was still alive. And all the children born that year were all dead. After ruling out the three remaining ones, there isn't any left. If you said it was a child that was born a few years before, then the Earth clan wouldn't only move till this year, the only possibility was that the outsider was the Celestial Master of the White Tiger.

"There is logic in your words, but he isn't pure Gold blooded. A person without pure Gold blood can't be the Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

The ball shook his head saying.

"You want to use the Three Records Glimpse?"

The stick turned his to look at Charles Ming.

Charles Ming nodded his head.

"He might not be our Celestial Master of the White Tiger, but he could very possibly threaten the Earth clan."

"There is sense in your words third brother."

The ball stated.

After a moment of pondering, the stick heavily nodded his head.

"It's worth the gamble."

After deciding, the three immediately started, their three copper poles leaving their hands, floating in the air to become a triangular one meter tall, half a meter wide copper mirror, after leaving the ground for a few meters it stopped. Donford Wu was standing facing the south and his back facing the north. The three stood in front of them chanting.

“Esteemed Gold Deity, please give us enlightenment, the eternal Big Dipper, please give us direction, this rude prying is a sin against the heavens and earth, we are willing to accept your punishment.....”

The stick first moved, walking forward and placed his left hand on Donford Wu’s forehead. Donford Wu once again felt that sour, numb, painful, itchy feeling. Right now, his back was facing the copper mirror in the sky, so he couldn’t see what was happening in it. He could only see that after the ball took a glance, he placed his right hand on his right shoulder.

“Why can’t we see the scene of twelve years in his past?”

The ball revealed an expression of doubt.

“He really doesn’t belong here.”

Charles Ming stepped forward, placing his left hand on top of Donford Wu’s left shoulder.

“What is this place?”

“With so many devils, it’s the Ghost Realm!”

“Why hasn’t his face changed?”

“The Fury Blaze Dance, how can he use the Fire Clan’s bodily technique?”

“Ah? The Celestial Master of the Azure Dragon’s Eight Wooden Dragon Thunderclap.....

Chapter 29 White Tiger Tattoo

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-29/>

Chapter 29 White Tiger Tattoo

Donford Wu had his back facing the copper mirror in the sky, so he wasn't able to see what was happening in the copper mirror. Even though he really wanted to look back, but he forced himself to endure it. He knew very clearly that moving would cause the Three Records Glimpse to stop.

Even though he didn't move, the Three Records Glimpse didn't last long, after the ball cried out the Eight Wooden Dragon Thunderclap, Charles Ming retracted his hand, then following the other two did too.

The three raised their hand to call back their poles of law, even though the whole process didn't even last ten seconds, but the three were covered in sweat, almost to the point of dehydration. After taking back their poles of law, the stick and ball could still barely stand, only Charles Ming staggered, almost falling. Donford Wu hurriedly stepped forward to support him, just then, Charles Ming was the one who used the laws the longest, and the amount of Gold Qi he exhausted was also the most serious.

Yaara Ming ran over, helping Donford Wu carry Charles Ming over to a boulder to sit down on.

Charles Ming and the stick and ball all looked at Donford Wu, but none of them spoke. The expression on their faces was very complicated, apart from suspicion and excitement, there was also shock and dismay.

Different from their complicated expressions, Yaara Ming only had happiness in her face. She was right, Donford Wu really wasn't a normal person, and had even more potential than she thought. In just the few short seconds, the Donford Wu in the copper mirror was able to use two high rank way of controlling laws from different clans.

A few seconds later, the other expressions on Charles Ming gradually disappeared, only leaving excitement.

"That was dangerous, we almost missed this chance!"

Charles Ming raised his hand to continuously pat Donford Wu's shoulder.

"What he used wasn't our Gold clan way of controlling the laws."

The stick's tone had a complicated mix of disappointment and suspicion.

"Just because he didn't use them doesn't mean he doesn't know how to."

Charles Ming stated.

"What Third Brother says makes sense."

The ball continued on by the side.

"The Eight Wooden Dragon Thunderclap is the Wood clan's way of controlling the laws, the Fury Blaze Dance is a way of controlling the laws from the Fire clan. Since he could use both the Wood clan's and the Fire clan's way of controlling the laws, then naturally he can learn how to use our Gold clan's way of controlling the laws.

"Three Celestial Masters. May I ask what you just saw?"

Donford Wu finally found a chance to speak out.

The ball rushed to talk first.

"It was a very dark environment, it should be somewhere in the Underground Ghost Realm. You were using a bodily technique from the Fire clan called the Fury Blaze Dance to speed through the air. A group of devils tried to stop you in your path, as a result, they were scattered from you using the Wood clan's Eight Wooden Dragon Thunderclap."

Charles Ming seeing the confusion in Donford Wu's face spoke out to explain.

"The Fury Blaze Dance is a bodily law used by the Fire clan's Celestial Master. Borrowing flames to rush through the air, very similar to our Lightning Movement of the Winds and Clouds. The Eight Wooden Dragon Thunderclap is a way of controlling the laws from the Wood clan, which uses the Eight Wooden Deity Dragon's Roar to attack a large group of enemies. Since the beginning, only the Celestial Master of the Azure Dragon could cultivate this way of controlling the laws."

"We don't know why, but your face hasn't changed at all from twelve years in the future and now. There wasn't any sign of aging at all."

The ball told him.

"He doesn't belong to our period, maybe our years aren't able to affect his body."

The stick started to droop his face. This wasn't because he wasn't happy, but rather he always had a droopy face.

"You're called Donford right?"

The ball looked at Donford Wu.

"Yes."

Donford Wu nodded his head.

"Donford, have you married Third Brother's bundle of joy yet?"

The ball asked on.

Donford Wu instantly knew why this person asked this question, and immediately replied with a straight face.

"With father in law as the witness, we already gotten married half a month ago, but it's just that we haven't held any ceremonies and such."

"Good, good, good. Let me tell you, using this Three Records Glimpse will shorten all three of our lives....."

"No matter where I go from now on, no matter what clans I learn the ways of controlling the laws from, I will forever be the Gold clan's shaman, Yaara Ming will forever be my wife."

Donford Wu declared in a loud voice.

With these words, the ball and stick both shouted "Good!" at the same time, Charles Ming smiled with nodding his head, Yaara Ming lowered her head in embarrassment.

"Third Brother really wasn't wrong about you. In the name of the Gold Deity Rhys, I bestow upon you the marking of the White Tiger, from now on, you are a shaman of our Gold clan."

The ball said while taking out a square shaped ancient copper box. This thing was very similar to ink stamps in modern times, it should be a cover for a stamp.

The ball opened up the copper box, inside was really a tiger shaped copper stamp with a sharp bottom, and there was also coloring inside. The ball took the White Tiger stamp and passed it over to Charles Ming.

“Come, come, come, he’s your son in law, you do it.”

“No need, I believe him.”

Charles Ming waved his hand.

“This isn’t something to do with trust, a Gold clan shaman must have a White Tiger marking.”

The stick said in a serious tone.

Donford Wu wasn’t even able to force a smile standing by the side. Their actions right now wasn’t any different from peeing to mark your territory. This is to mark him as theirs. They were afraid that he’ll be taken away by someone else, so they hurriedly tried to take him first.

Charles Ming turned his head to look at Donford Wu, without asking, Donford Wu knew that Charles Ming was asking for his opinion.

Donford Wu didn’t have any hesitation, pulling open his clothes to reveal his chest, his two knees hit the ground facing Charles Ming. The reason why he didn’t kneel before was because of his morals, he didn’t want to kneel just for favors. Right now he knew what is going to happen to him. Kneeling was a respect to the elderly, and anyways, when he marries his daughter, he would have to kneel sooner or later.

Charles Ming might have thought the same as the stick and ball, was a bit embarrassed to be too open about it. Seeing Donford Wu actively agree, he took the copper stamp from the ball’s hand and pointed it at Donford Wu’s chest.

Through the copper stamp, Donford Wu could feel that Charles Ming’s hand was slightly shaking.

Celestial Masters can control metals at will, the bottom of the copper stamp pierced into his flesh, following, the coloring seeped in. Waiting until Charles

Ming took off the copper mark, an abstract yet godly tiger was left on Donford Wu's chest.

Charles Ming handed the copper stamp back to the ball, reaching his two hands out to help Donford Wu up, happily patting Donford Wu's arms. The stick and ball also couldn't hold their excitement, laughing loudly.

At this moment, Donford Wu felt mixed emotions. At first he thought of how he couldn't be in the troops anymore because of his tattoo, the troops couldn't have a person with a tattoo. Then there was the ball and sticks laugh. The more he heard the laugh, the more he thought of Hu Hansan and Huang Shiren (both fictional characters from Chinese movies that have very famous laughs.), with this, he remembered something he long forgotten about.

"Not good."

The ball stopped laughing first.

"If the Gold clan suddenly pops up an unfamiliar shaman, then outsiders would definitely become suspicious, his safety would become a problem."

Donford Wu hearing this secretly cursed out.

"What the fuck were you thinking when you took out the stamp, only thinking about this afterwards."

"That's right, with his kind of situation, how he can learn our ways of controlling the laws also becomes a problem."

The stick stated out.

Hearing this, Donford Wu once again secretly cursed. They didn't care about anything, only thinking about taking him first, then thinking about the results later.

"They're safe staying here, as for cultivating, we can think about that later. As long as we closely protect that child, the Earth clan wouldn't be able to think that the Celestial Master of the White Tiger is an adult."

Charles Ming told them.

"Second brother, have you made the right arrangements before leaving?"

The stick looked at the ball.

“Everything’s good, I melted the two copper doors together, no one can open it, relax.”

The ball looked at the White Tiger tattoo on Donford Wu’s chest with a feeling of success.

“You didn’t leave any gaps?”

The stick hurriedly inquired.

“Leave a gap for people to enter?”

The ball twitched his mouth.

“If there isn’t any breathing holes, then they’ll all die from suffocation.”

The stick stared angrily at the ball, following, he tossed out his copper pole and flew away towards the east at great speeds.

“The rooms so big, they won’t suffocate that easily.”

The ball didn’t follow the stick to leave.

“Don’t worry about him, since we’re able to see what he’s doing in twelve years, then that means he’ll be safe all these years.”

The ball told Charles Ming.

“The Three Records Glimpse can make variables happen.”

Charles Ming still had an expression of worry on his face.

“True.”

The ball nodded his head then also started to worry.

“Celestial Master, what variable are you talking about?”

Donford Wu didn’t have a father since he was small, even though he always wanted to call out dad, but he just couldn’t.

“If we didn’t use the Three Records Glimpse, then that would have definitely happened twelve years later, but since we now know beforehand, then it could affect what happens later on.”

Charles Ming explained.

"Will there be large changes?"

Donford Wu continued to ask.

"Not too large, but there definitely will be changes. The deities of the heavens and earth won't let ordinary people to see through them. But since we payed the price, the esteemed deities wouldn't deliberately change anything."

Charles Ming stated.

Donford Wu nodded his head. What Charles Ming was pointing out with esteemed deities should be established rules of development. At this time, people treated things they weren't familiar with and unknown as ghosts and deities.

"Dad, what's the price of using the Three Records Glimpse."

"Shortening of life, but I shouldn't say how much now."

The ball cut in by the side.

Hearing this, Yaara Ming revealed an expression of guilt and remorse.

Donford Wu helplessly took a glance at the ball. This ball called Uncle Xavier emphasized this point, was because, without a question to let him to know how much the Gold clan helped him and sacrificed for him. But there wasn't much use in the ball doing this. A person who forgets who helped him won't care even if you are even better towards them. But if it was a person who cares deeply about favors, then even if it's just a piece of bread in poverty, he would remember it all his life.

"We must think of something to guarantee his safety."

The ball stroked his beard under his chin.

"We can't be too obvious, or else it'll cause suspicion."

Charles Ming shook his head.

After a moment of silence, the ball suddenly turned his head to look at Charles Ming. It was clear that he thought of something.

Charles Ming could guess what the ball was thinking of, waving his hand at the

ball.

"He is your son in law, and also our Celestial Master of the White Tiger, it'll be his sooner or later."

The ball stated.

"It's too heavy, he can't control metal, after wearing it, he wouldn't even be able to move."

Charles Ming shook his head.

"You're right."

The ball started to stroke his beard again.

"You two don't need to worry about my safety, I know how to protect myself."

Donford Wu told the two.

Charles Ming nodded his head.

"We have been out for too long, we must hurry back. Don't be in a hurry to cultivate the ways of controlling the laws, we'll think of something as quickly as possible after we come back."

Donford Wu responded with a nod of his head.

Charles Ming spoke at Yaara Ming.

"Tell Donford our Gold clan's way of cultivating the control over the laws. Remember, do not let him reckless cultivate."

"Okay."

Yaara Ming replied.

"We might not be able to come back in a short period of time, don't be in a hurry."

Charles Ming looked at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu nodded his head. They killed the messaging party in the afternoon, they surely must stay at the capital to tighten security.

Charles Ming used too much of the laws, making him a bit weak. The ball changed his copper pole into a door sized copper plate, carrying them both

towards the east.

Sending them off with their gazes, Yaara Ming walked over.

“Congratulations.”

“You don’t seem to be too happy.”

Donford Wu tilted his head to look at Yaara Ming.

“I’m worried about your safety.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“You’re worrying that you’ll grow old and become ugly. Don’t worry, my hair and beard has always been growing, there won’t be no change in my body, if we grow old, we’ll grow old together.”

Donford Wu smiled.

Having Donford Wu guess what was on her mind, she became embarrassed and moved. Both her eyes carrying deep emotions, looking at him.

“What are you looking at me for, do you also want to do it?”

Chapter 30 Blurred Lines of the Three Realms

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-30/>

Chapter 30 Blurred Lines of the Three Realms “Do it?”

Yaara Ming didn’t understand.

Donford Wu sat by the fire and sneezed, he knew that Yaara Ming wouldn’t understand so naturally he wouldn’t explain.

“Go rest, I’ll come find you tomorrow.”

Said Yaara Ming.

“Okay.”

Donford Wu replied with enthusiasm.

It seemed like Yaara Ming didn’t expect for him to be so enthusiastic, after hesitating a few seconds, she turned around and went down the mountain.

After Yaara Ming left, Donford Wu didn’t think too much about things, putting his head down he went to sleep. Everything that happened to him today caused him to have a bit of a headache. Sleeping should help him calm his head down.

Not sleeping for long, he was woken by Food Dump. Food Dump currently had diarrhea. It was probably because its tummy wasn’t feeling too well that it started walking around him “Hn”ing.

Helplessly, Donford Wu raised the fire. Hugging the Food Dump that was afraid of fire but wanted to be warm, Donford Wu sat by the fire to bask in the flames. Maybe because it was excessively startled, maybe because what it ate before wasn’t good for it, Food Dump “Hn”ed half the night away.

Early in the morning, Donford Wu went out to find food for Food Dump to eat. This time he didn’t try to find meat for Food Dump but rather carried back a pile of soft bamboo. These things had a lot of fiber, it could help clean the digestive system.

Without a watch he couldn’t know what time it was so he could only guess. Around eight, Yaara Ming came by.

"I'm going out for a bit."

Donford Wu climbed to a standing position.

"What are you going to do?"

Yaara Ming asked.

"Find food."

Donford Wu picked up his bow and arrows and went down the mountain.

When he brought back fish, Yaara Ming was currently playing with Food Dump. But Food Dump didn't like her, gnawing away at the bamboo, it ignored her.

Donford Wu lit back up the fire, splitting open the fish, he started grilling it. Maybe because of the environment she grew up in and her position was different, even though Yaara Ming cared about him a lot, but she wasn't like Walda Ming who took care of his living quarters, eating, and clothing. This wasn't because she didn't want to, but she didn't know how to.

"Tell me about your ways of controlling the laws."

Donford Wu started rolling the tree branch that pierced through the fish.

"Let me think were to start from."

Yaara Ming walked over.

"Anything's good."

Donford Wu told her.

"Being a pure Gold blood is the first requirement for cultivating our Gold clan's way of controlling the laws. Without pure Gold blood, then you wouldn't be able to sense the Gold Qi, which means you can't absorb and borrow the Gold Qi in between the heavens and earth."

Yaara Ming stated.

"Are the other four clans like this as well?"

Donford Wu inquired.

"Yes, every shaman from different clans can only cultivate and absorb the Spiritual Qi that match their own bodies."

Yaara Ming told him.

"In the period of time I lived in, there are also people like you, but the Qi they cultivate isn't separated so clearly like yours. But rather through meditation and breathing techniques, they directly absorb the Spiritual Qi in the world. At most they split it into Yin and Yang Qi, but there isn't any five different classes."

Donford Wu stated.

"You were a shaman in your period of time?"

Yaara Ming not understanding, asked.

"No, I told you before, I was a warrior."

Donford Wu sprinkled some salt on the grilled fish.

"Then how do you know about and meditating through breathing techniques, Yin Yang and the five classes?"

Yaara Ming asked.

"In my time, there was books, TVs, and even advertisements of old men and women doing Taiji (Tai Chi). These kinds of things aren't unfamiliar to us."

Donford Wu shook his head saying. Conversing and communication are two different things, to be able to smoothly converse doesn't mean he can smoothly communicate.

Yaara Ming nodded her head. She didn't ask for details about what books were and what televisions were. This wasn't because she wasn't curious, but because she knew that Donford Wu didn't like remembering the past.

"You guys cultivate through meditation and breathing techniques too?"

Donford Wu asked.

"Yes, but if you want to control the laws, you must also learn different chants and footwork. In your period of time, are there shamans too?"

"There is, but they aren't called shamans, they are called Taoists (same as Daoists). What they worship aren't the Gold Deity, Wood Deity and whatnot, but the Three Clarities."

Donford Wu passed the grilled fish over to Yaara Ming.

“Thanks.”

When taking that half of a grilled fish, Yaara Ming felt very sweet. She noticed that Donford Wu took off the charred part.

“I told you a lot of times already, there is no need to say thank you between couples.”

Donford Wu helplessly shook his head. Yaara Ming spoke like that of a lady, a lady is good and all, but she couldn’t just let it go and she always kept her manners.

“I heard you talk about the Three Clarities before, what kind of Deities are they?”

“How can I say this, the Ancestor of the Great Balance, do you know their master, Ancestor of the Great Balance?

Donford Wu asked.

“No.”

Yaara Ming shook her head, confused.

“Then what about Pangu, Nuwu, Fuxi, and Shennong, do you know about them?”

Donford Wu asked again.

Yaara Ming continuously nodded her head.

“These I know, they were deities from long ago.”

“Are they still here?”

Donford Wu asked. It was fortunate for the names of people from legends to actually match the names in ancient times. If not, Yaara Ming wouldn’t know who he was talking about.

“They’re the same as our Gold Deity Rhys, they gave their control over the laws back to the heavens and earth long ago.”

Yaara Ming stated.

“What exactly is giving control over the laws back to the heavens and earth?”

Donford Wu questioned.

This wasn't the first time he asked this question. Last time, Yaara Ming wasn't able to explain it to him, seeing him asked this question, she thought very carefully before opening her mouth.

"It is to return all your Spiritual Qi back to the heavens and earth. Even though the body isn't here, but their Qi is still with the heavens and earth. Some people can feel the Qi that they left behind, and through controlling the laws, they borrow their power."

"If you say it like that, then I understand. Let's eat first."

Donford Wu started his breakfast.

Smelling the delicious fish, Food Dump threw away the bamboo and stumbled over and raised its head to look at Donford Wu. Seeing Donford Wu ignoring it, it turned its head to look at Yaara Ming. Yaara Ming shredded a piece of fish meat over to it. Just when Food Dump wanted to bite down, Donford Wu snatched it away first.

"It has diarrhea, don't let it eat meat."

With the hard to get fish meat being taken away by Donford Wu, Food Dump's started to be anxious. Climbing on top of Donford Wu's leg to try to take it back, it discovered the fish meat was already stuffed into Donford Wu's mouth. Because of this, it started a discontent protest. "Ah, Ah, Ah....."

"The hell you "Ah"ing for, go gnaw on your bamboo."

Donford Wu pointed at Food Dump then pointed at the pile of bamboo at the entrance of the cave.

Hearing Donford Wu's tone turn serious, Food Dump didn't dare call out, depressed, it went back to its original position.

"You're too strict with it."

Yaara Ming said.

"Maybe because you haven't raised this kind of animal before, so you guys don't know its diet. Its diet isn't the same as dogs and bears, you can't just feed it meat."

Donford Wu told her.

“I see.”

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

After nodding her head, she looked behind Donford Wu, following, she frowned.

Seeing Yaara Ming’s strange expression, Donford Wu turned around to look. Only to find Food Dump running away in a panic. Looking more closely, he discovered a pile of shit behind him.

“The fuck.”

Donford Wu grabbed a pebble and threw it behind him. Food Dump was quick, the pebble couldn’t even touch it.

Donford Wu didn’t continue to hit it, taking some dried leaves to cover the poop, he turned around to continue eating.

“How can it be so smart?”

Yaara Ming looked at the Food Dump that hid away in the cave.

“Smart its fucking ass, a lot of animals poop when they are angry. Haven’t you seen a hippo before, those guys shit a lot more.”

Donford Wu spoke out.

“Here, for you.”

Yaara Ming’s appetite was taken away by Donford Wu’s words, so she give the fish back to him.

“Around two kilometers to the south there’s a small hill. There, you’ll be able to find some ripe fruits, go and pick some.”

Donford Wu casually took the grilled fish, he was different from Yaara Ming that stayed at home all day long. When he had nothing to do he would go running around, so he was even more familiar with the surroundings than Yaara Ming.

Donford Wu finished the grilled fish, Yaara Ming also returned with the picked fruits. She had a much cleaner habit than Donford Wu, after bringing back the

fruit she went to take a bath.

With the sun raising, the outside started to become hot, the two went back into the cave.

“Are there still living gods?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Gods?”

Yaara Ming was unfamiliar with this title.

“It means what you guys call deities.”

Donford Wu didn’t like the title of deities, it always makes him think of people harming cults.

“Ah, what type of deity are you talking about?”

Yaara Ming stated.

“Are deities split into many different kinds?”

Donford Wu picked up a water can and started drinking.

“There is a kind that people cultivate, one that beasts cultivate and another which dark spirits and dark things cultivate.”

“The first one are called gods, the one that beasts cultivate into are called demons, and the ones that dark spirits and dark things cultivate into are called ghosts.”

Donford Wu put back down the water can, shaking his head.

“We just call them all deities.”

Yaara Ming stated.

Donford Wu didn’t try to debate with Yaara Ming.

“Okay, okay, okay, then where do these deities live?”

“Some live in the heavens, some live underground, there are also some that live among us.”

Yaara Ming passed a piece of fruit over to Donford Wu.

"There are also some that live with humans?"

Donford Wu received the fruit and casually tossed it to the bored Food Dump. Food Dump held the fruit in between its mouth and ran out of the cave.

"There is. Deities can live wherever they want to."

Yaara Ming nodded her head.

"What you're saying is that they can run around without restriction?"

Donford Wu asked, surprised.

"Who will restrict them?"

Yaara Ming doubtfully asked back.

"The Great Jade Emperor in the Heavenly Palace, and also Yama in the Under Worldly Mansion. They won't manage these deities?"

Donford Wu asked.

"There isn't."

Yaara Ming shook her head.

"What do you mean by there isn't, there isn't a Heaven Palace and Under Worldly Mansion or there isn't any Great Jade Emperor and King Yama."

Donford Wu continued to ask.

"There isn't any of that."

"Yesterday night I heard them talk about the Ghost Realm."

Donford Wu told her.

"That's just the name we gave an area where Dark Spirits and Dark Things live. No one stops them there."

Yaara Ming stated.

"There must be good and bad deities. If the bad deities do bad things, then what will you do? Who will go stop them?"

Donford Wu continued to inquire on.

"The shamans of the different clans."

Yaara Ming stated.

"Shamans can beat them?"

Donford Wu questioned.

"Some can."

Yaara Ming told him.

"And if you can't defeat them, then what to do?"

Donford Wu asked again.

"We don't have a Celestial Master of the White Tiger, if Dad and they can't defeat the deities that have committed crimes, then we can only pay tribute and sacrifice to them."

Yaara Ming helplessly said.

"Sacrifices and tributes will only allow them to become more and more wild. These demons and ghosts can come to where humans live, can we go to where they live?"

Donford Wu questioned again.

"You should be able to. Yesterday night's Three Records Glimpse, you went through the Ghost Realm where Dark Spirits and Dark Things gather."

Yaara Ming told him.

"What would I go to this haunted place for?"

Donford Wu leaned on a rock wall, he originally thought that he had a basic understanding of this period of them. Only now did he discover that he truly didn't understand this dynasty, the Xia dynasty was much more complicated and messy than he thought. Gods are able to go wherever they please, demons run wild.

"You are our last hope."

Yaara Ming concentrated her gaze on Donford Wu.

Donford Wu painfully smiled shaking his head. This was a period of no order, laws, or restrictions. Even though there was the shape of a civilization, but it still

followed the natural law of the survival of the fittest. Anything that was right or wrong was decided who was the strongest.

Yaara Ming reached out her hand to grab Donford Wu's left hand, trying to encourage him.

Donford Wu took a glance at Yaara Ming. Standing up, he walked to the cave entrance and looked outside. Only seeing Food Dump was curled up in a ball sleeping on top of a boulder.

"What are you thinking?"

Yaara Ming discovered a strange expression on Donford Wu's face.

"Taking an advantage while there is a fire."

Donford Wu grinned while titling his head.

"You want hope right, if you want hope then clothes need to be off....."

Chapter 31 In the Middle of the Day

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-31/>

Chapter 31 In the Middle of the Day

Yaara Ming naturally didn't take anything off, she wanted to run.

Donford Wu naturally wouldn't allow her to run. Grabbing her, hugging her, and putting her down on the ground.

"No, No, I'm not ready yet."

Yaara Ming refused, surprised.

Donford Wu knew what he wanted to do, saying anything now was of no use.

"I really am not ready yet."

Yaara Ming tried to push him away.

Donford Wu found the string that tied her clothes together to have a dead knot. So he then started from the collar, trying to pull the whole thing off.

Even though Yaara Ming didn't try to scratch his face, but she still continued to struggle. He tried to take it off many times but couldn't. Giving up, he directly lifted up the robe.

"Wait until night time okay? Night time, Night time I'll come over."

Yaara Ming said in horror.

Donford Wu didn't listen, it has already been more than have a month, Yaara Ming still wasn't ready. Giving her another half a month, she still wouldn't be ready. Ignore her, do what you have to do.

Beneath the robe was the undergarments, the undergarment also had a death knot. To forcefully pull on it would definitely hurt Yaara Ming. Adding his left hand, using the strength of both hands, he shredded open the string.

"I'm angry, I'm really angry."

Through the robe, Yaara Ming used both hands to grab her undergarments.

Donford Wu laughed while looking at Yaara Ming. Taking out his left hand, he scratched the left side of Yaara Ming a few times. Yaara Ming couldn't stand itches. With her hand loosened, before she could even react to grab it again, her undergarment was already gone.

"Do you believe I will ignore you forever?"

Yaara Ming put on a solemn expression.

Donford Wu pretended he didn't hear anything. Reaching out to confirm there wasn't anything else blocking, he started to unbuckle his belt. In the whole process Yaara Ming was struggling, but he didn't have any hesitation. He once saw how Walda Ming resisted those three Fire clansmen when they wanted to rape her. That was true resistance, a crazy scratching, biting and kicking, three people could barely hold her. If a woman really turns mad, no matter how strong a man was, they wouldn't be able to do what they wanted to do without knocking her unconscious. Except if the woman was too afraid to resist or they actually didn't really want to resist.

Yaara Ming was a shaman, if she really wanted to resist him, with a kick she could send him flying. No kicking meant she didn't want to fight back, not wanting to fight back meant she allowed it and mutually said yes. As for this symbolic struggle, it was half for push half for pull.

Waiting until Donford Wu bent down, Yaara Ming stopped moving, closing both her hands. Her face was filled with nervousness, even to the point where she slightly trembled.

Seeing the last defense in Yaara Ming's heart crumble, he also slowed down. Standing straight, he untied Yaara Ming's robe, with enough time, the string that held the robe together was smoothly unfastened.

Sliding off the robe, Yaara Ming didn't move.

Taking off the undergarment on top of her breasts, Yaara Ming didn't move.

Right until Donford Wu went down again, did Yaara Ming move. She didn't resist but reached out to hug him.

Donford Wu's first action wasn't a kiss, nor touching the breasts, but directly finding his target, at this moment, this was what a man wanted to do the most.

As for the people in TV who touch and kiss the people they sexually assaulted, that was just to give some time for the hero to kick down the door and save the damsel in distress.

Finding and confirming his target, Donford Wu suddenly stopped.

Seeing him suddenly not moving, Yaara Ming slowly opened her eyes to look at Donford Wu. There was the natural nervousness in her eyes, and there was blurriness. In addition to this, there was confusion and doubt.

Donford Wu slightly bent down.

Through her legs, she could feel why he bent down, and also understood why he suddenly stopped.

With a heart filled with nervousness and embarrassment, Yaara Ming closed her eyes and softly nodded her head. She once observed Donford Wu for a very long time. There were some things she knew about beforehand, that was why she has always been so nervous and refused him all the time.

Even with Yaara Ming's approval, Donford Wu didn't dare to really do it, their positions in society was really too far apart.

Seeing him still hesitate, Yaara Ming put strength into her arms, closely hugging him.

Acquiring Yaara Ming's encouragement, the man's instinct inside him rushed out. Beneath him was a woman the same age as him, and was a shaman that could control the laws. Just because she hasn't experienced hardships doesn't mean she can't endure them.

Anything that comes, will come no matter what. His hesitation and irresolution broken by Yaara Ming. After a few seconds of waiting, she chose to take the initiative to welcome him.

Body language was able to show more of what a person was truly thinking than speaking. Yaara Ming could conquer her pained expression, but she couldn't stop her body from shaking.

Donford Wu concentrated his gaze onto the woman below him. Even though it was just a simple shove of her body, but inside it were emotions and feelings

unable to be explained by words. There was love and accepting deep within the heart, the repayment for refusing him from before, and there was the willing to take on any burdens. In there was also the meaning of being the initiative, that there was no need to blame himself.

Currently, his feelings contradicted each other. He wasn't a sissy that kissed people's toes, he was a soldier that has killed many enemies. At the same time his crazed male hormones came bursting out, it also completely brought out the feelings of killing, conquest, destruction that came when a man was born. At this moment, what he wanted to do most was a reckless take over.

But at the same time, there was also another thought that came floating in. That was a man's thirst to protect. This is also an instinct a man is born with, to protect the weak, to take care of them, to not let them be bullied or harm.

There was no way to resolve this contradiction, they exist at the same time. This deep and meaningful gaze confirmed to Yaara Ming that this man truly loved her, and would never abandon and leave her. The ruthless take over let her to believe that this man was brave and strong, no matter what opponent he faced, he would courageously fight till the end.

The determination of a person that has been through cruel and tough training is strong, strong enough to influence and control things that seem uncontrollable. This was a man's greatest confidence, no matter how large the resistance was in front of them, no matter how much pressure is on him, I will do whatever I want to do, I will never fail.

Just when Yaara Ming's face was covered with sweat, he decided to slow down, there wasn't any disappointment or emptiness, but only an incomparable satisfaction and peace within his heart.

At the same time Donford Wu raised his hand, Yaara Ming reached out her hand. What they wanted to do was the same, to wipe off the sweat on each other's foreheads.

After wiping away the sweat on Donford Wu's forehead, Yaara Ming let out a small smile, even though the hint of a smile was immediately replaced by a pained expression, Donford Wu could still catch that moment of a tender smile. This was the most real, most beautiful smile he ever saw in his whole life.

He wanted to kiss Yaara Ming, so that was what he did. Even if he wasn't too good at it, nor was Yaara Ming, but in the midst of the clumsiness, there was clear honesty. The most beautiful things in the world are always things that haven't been modified, the most beautiful woman is always a woman without make up.

Before the passionate kiss ended, Yaara Ming once again revealed a moaning and painful expression.

Donford Wu naturally knew the reason, smiling wryly, he looked at Yaara Ming.

Yaara Ming breathed in a breath of cold air, continuously shaking her head.

Donford Wu wasn't willing to move forward, or retreat out, he just stopped there, not moving.

"Get up, don't let anyone see."

Yaara Ming's breathing was still very hurried.

"No one will come here."

Donford Wu shook his head.

"Food Dump is still outside."

Yaara Ming stated.

Donford Wu really didn't want to part with this feeling, but he was still worried that after Food Dump woke up, it would run in. It was still small, a child shouldn't see this kind of scene.

With an unwilling heart, Donford Wu used his arms to push himself up, dismantling his campsite and retreating.

After standing up, Yaara Ming used her right arm to cover up her own eyes.

"What are you covering your eyes for?"

Donford Wu smiled.

Yaara Ming was extremely embarrassed, raising a leg and tilting to the side, she said.

“Quickly put on some clothes.”

“There’s blood, I can’t wear it.”

“There’s water in the can.”

It could be said they stopped just at the right time. Just when Donford Wu put on his clothes, Food Dump ran inside, the sun was too hot, waking it up.

But it seemed like Food Dump didn’t sleep enough, after dozily running in, it climbed into the rock encirclement and kept on sleeping.

“You go out first, I’m going to put on some clothes.”

Yaara Ming waved her hand away.

“Okay, I’ll go get some water for you.”

Donford Wu carried the water basin out the cave, breathing in the fresh air, he felt a feeling he hasn’t felt for a long time, free. All his worries were swept away.

“Oh, I just thought of something.”

Donford Wu turned around back towards the cave.

Yaara Ming was just sitting up, putting on her undergarments. Seeing Donford Wu come in, she quickly covered her chest with a undergarment that looked like Yem.

“Go out.”

“I suddenly thought of something, and it’s really important.”

Donford Wu walked over.

“What is it?”

Yaara Ming instantly returned to her serious expression.

“You guys are have pure Gold blood, so you can absorb the Gold Qi in the world, but it’s because you are pure Gold blood that you can only absorb Gold Qi and unable to absorb others. I’m different from you guys, I can’t just absorb Gold Qi. I must absorb all five Qis at the same time. If I only absorb one, I’ll surely die. If I absorb all five then I’ll be safer.”

From that breath of fresh air, Donford Wu had a sudden spark of inspiration.

Yaara Ming frowned and crinkled her forehead, pondering what Donford Wu just said.

"Think about it. The Spiritual Qi I absorb has all five different Qis in it, as long as I have Gold Qi in my body, then I will be able to use your Gold clan's ways of controlling the laws. Which also means the Spiritual Qi I absorb can use all five clan's way of controlling the laws."

Donford Wu elaborated.

"When you control the laws, you'll exhaust the Gold Qi, but the amount other Spiritual Qi won't decrease, you'll still have the same problem."

"It's not what you think, they are all absorbed by me at the same time, if they need to go out, they'll all go out, there won't be any single Qi left behind."

Donford Wu stated.

"If this is true, then you not only can use all five clans way of controlling the laws, but your cultivation speed is also five times faster than ours. Because you can absorb five portions while we can only absorb one."

Yaara Ming told him.

"That should be right. I'm not too sure on how long you need to cultivate the ways of controlling the laws. But twelve years later, I am able to use powerful ways of controlling the laws from the Fire and Wood clan. Are ordinary shamans able to do this?"

"They can't."

Yaara Ming shook her head saying.

Donford Wu smiled.

"Don't be so happy just yet."

Yaara Ming frowned while shaking her head."

"The five clans' ways of absorbing Qi are all aimed at their own clan's blood, so all the ways of absorbing Qi aren't suitable for you."

"We take a shaman from each clan and torture them, they'll do it for me."

Donford Wu was very optimistic.

"It isn't as easy as you think, go out first, I'm going to put on some clothes....."

Chapter 32 The Next Day

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-32/>

Chapter 32 The Next Day

“Don’t be in such a hurry to get up, I’ll go get some water for you.”

Donford Wu carried a water can out of the cave.

Waiting until he came back with fresh water from the stream, Yaara Ming already finished putting on clothes. The dirtied pants was folded up by her to the side.

“I don’t really know how to.....can you wash it?”

Yaara Ming pointed at the folded pants.

“Sit down and don’t move, I’ll go.”

Donford Wu put down the water can and carried the pants away.

The women of the village would often wash clothes by the west side stream. He was afraid that the women of the villagers would see the blood on his pants so he didn’t go towards the west, but went east, towards the large river, to wash the pants.

Coming back once again, Yaara Ming already walked out the cave, and was currently looking at Food Dump who was gnawing on bamboo on the ground since it awoken from hunger.

“Since it’s inconvenient, you shouldn’t move around too much. You shouldn’t go back tonight, I still have some corn here.”

Donford Wu went to dry the pants.

“No need, I can walk.”

Yaara Ming shook her head.

Donford Wu helplessly glanced at Yaara Ming. With her clothes back on, the inviolable seriousness immediately came back to her face.

Food Dump seeing Donford Wu had come back, grabbed a bamboo and ran

around him. He knew what Food Dump wanted to do, so he went inside the take out a piece of fruit for it. Food Dump loved sweats, it only gnawed at the bamboo since it had nothing else to chew on.

Yaara Ming sat there not speaking. Normally, he wouldn't talk either, but right now was not normal. He just bullied her, he can't just not talk.

Passing over a fruit to her, but she didn't eat it.

"So where did we talk to?"

Since he didn't have anything to say, he found something to talk about.

"The ways of cultivating Qi is different in all five different clans. Even if you know all other ways of cultivating Qi from the other clans, it'll be extremely hard to meld them all together."

Yaara Ming shook her head saying.

"At least we have to find the other four clans' way of cultivating Qi. Only then will we know if there is a suitable way for me. Right now, there seems to be only one road we can walk, we have to at least try."

Donford Wu started a fire and cooked congee.

"We barely know anything of the ways of cultivating Qi from the other four clans, they won't easily tell us."

Yaara Ming shook her head again.

"Just do as I just said....."

Yaara Ming waved her hand to ut him off.

"We can't do that, no matter which clan it is, a shaman's position is extremely high. If a shaman is missing, their family and clansmen will use all they can to find them."

Donford Wu slowly nodded his head. Apart from their honorable position, shamans also have a huge trait. That was that their descendants would sure to be a pure blooded clansmen. They normally only marry shamans of their own clan, causing shamans to become a family business. Which is also to say that any shaman in a clan would have family that was shaman in their own clan. If you

kidnap a young one, the elders would surely try to find him.

The most important thing is that only their clan would know who the young shaman was a descendant of. If in a one in a million chance they kidnapped one that was like Yaara Ming, it would be strange for her powerful parents not to devour him whole.

Yaara Ming spoke again.

"Even if we risked the dangers and kidnapped another clan's shaman, we don't know how their way of cultivating Qi looks like, even if they told us, it might just be a lie."

"True, this plan won't work."

Donford Wu nodded his head.

Going back, even if they caught another clan's shaman, their parents didn't come barging in, and the kidnapped shaman told the truth. At the end, taking care of the shaman also became a problem. Killing them was too despicable. If you let them go, then they'll surely run back and tell everyone their horrible experience. The Gold clan was the weakest clan of all five. If the other clans only asked for the person to be punished would be the best scenario, but directly starting a war was also a great possibility.

"Don't be in such a hurry, Dad and they are thinking of something."

Yaara Ming spoke out to comfort him.

"What I'm afraid is that you guys are in too much of a hurry."

Donford Wu used a wooden pole to move around the burning fire wood. Charles Ming and they killed off the messaging party, right now, they still didn't know what kind of reaction the Earth clan would have. If the Earth clan really sent out troops, then there'll be a risk for the whole Gold clan to be annihilated. Even if they were tricked by Charles Ming and they for the moment. When time goes on, they'll sooner or later find out that the Celestial Master of the White Tiger was fake.

"We'll think of something later, first let me tell you about our Gold clan's way of cultivating Qi."

Yaara Ming stated.

"Let's talk inside."

Donford Wu threw away the wooden pole and stood up.

After a slight moment of hesitation, Yaara Ming nodded. Standing up she walked towards the cave. Seeing her wobble while she walked, he rushed forward to try to help her. Yaara Ming waved her hand to brush him away.

Donford Wu was already clear of Yaara Ming's temper. He knew that she was irritated because she couldn't move around all that well. After a moment of hesitation, he still went up to go support her. Confucius has already defined woman long ago. "Women and despicable people are hard to take care of, when the time is close, they'll think you of having no manners, when the time is far, they'll think you didn't care for them.

After shuffling inside, Donford Wu carried over the blanket and let Yaara Ming sit on it. He sat next to her, Food Dump clambered up and sat next to him.

After sitting down, Yaara Ming started to talk about the main points of Gold clan cultivation. Talking about cultivation, one must first talk about the Five Ways. Donford Wu knew these, Gold, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth. All restraining all helping each other, all the people in the world knew about this.

Then it was time for the pressure points, muscles and bones, Donford Wu knew about this too. If he didn't understand muscles and bones, then there was no way to subdue his opponent in close combat. If he didn't know pressure points, then he couldn't learn hard Qi. But his hard Qi wasn't any good, he felt that no matter how powerful hard Qi was, it wasn't as powerful as a gun. When fighting with enemies, they won't just wait for you to get close to them.

He knew some of the main pressure points, but the human body had a few hundred of these points, he couldn't remember them all. Yaara Ming started to point at pressure points one at a time, at first she taught him extremely detailed, but discovering Donford Wu becoming more and more irritated, she gave up on some of the not too useful pressure points and focused on the main ones.

After talking about pressure points, it was time to talk about meridian paths. They weren't too clear about the four other clans, but the Gold clan cultivated Qi

very similarly to today's way of cultivating Qi, it all ran through the Ren and Du meridian paths. Calming the heart through mediation, gather Gold Qi through breathing techniques, saying it more accurately, they didn't actively try absorb Gold Qi, but the Spiritual Qi that they could absorb and gather was only Gold Qi, maybe this was because of their body and blood.

Finishing talking about meridian paths, it was time to talk about ways of controlling the laws. Yaara Ming thinks that the ways of controlling the laws was bestowed upon them by the Gold Deity. Whenever they controlled the laws, they were helped by the Gold Deity Rhys. He just listened to it, but he didn't believe it. He felt that controlling the laws was just through a special cultivation practice, he could gather some useful Qi in his body, and using the Qi in his body to connect and react with the Qi in the outside world. Like throwing a rock into a body of water, it would create ripples around it. The person controlling the laws was the rock, and the effect of the laws was but just an expanding ripple. The Spiritual Qi in the world was this rippling water.

Yaara Ming talked a lot, Donford Wu listened a lot. He remembered some of it, and some he felt wasn't useful and didn't remember it. There was a limit to a person's vigor, they couldn't just remember everything, so there was bound to be some loses. What the challenge was, was to remember the main points.

"Is there anything you don't understand?"

Yaara Ming asked.

"I understand almost everything."

Donford Wu stood up and walked towards the outside.

"Where are you going?"

Yaara Ming asked.

"The congee should be done."

Donford Wu asked.

The congee was overcooked, there was no water left, it just turned into rice.

"You really understand everything?"

Yaara Ming pushed away the food can that Donford Wu passed over to her.

"I do, cultivating the ways of controlling the laws have two main points. One is mediating, it is to expel all useless thinking, so that when you control the laws, you can concentrate on shifting the Spiritual Qi in your body. Two is gather Qi, if the body doesn't have Spiritual Qi then there is no way to connect with your Gold Deity."

Donford Wu didn't say to connect with the Spiritual Qi in the outside world, afraid that Yaara Ming wouldn't be too happy about it.

"It is our Gold Deity."

Yaara Ming said in a strong tone.

"Okay, okay, our Gold Deity. Eat a bit, you haven't eaten a bite since morning."

Donford Wu once again passed over the food can.

"I'm not hungry, you eat."

Yaara Ming helplessly sighed out. Cultivating was an extremely serious matter. All the preparation beforehand has use, but when she was seriously passing on her knowledge, Donford Wu didn't pay too much attention, even to the point that he remembered the congee outside, his learning attitude wasn't all too good.

"I really remember it, if you don't trust me, then test me."

Donford Wu placed the food can to the side.

Yaara Ming really did test him, first asking about the meridian paths, then the pressure points, Donford Wu actually could answer all of them.

"Why do you want to take a bite of everything?"

Donford Wu sent Food Dump who sniffed the Food Dump running.

"Don't hit it."

Yaara Ming hurriedly stopped him.

"I didn't use any strength."

Donford Wu said.

"Still, no. It is the Bear King, you can't be so manner less to it."

Yaara Ming stated.

"And I'm the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, it'll be my mount later on."

Donford Wu stared at her saying.

"That doesn't even compare. It isn't sure that you are the Celestial Master of the White Tiger, but it definitely is the Bear King."

Yaara Ming told him.

"If you keep babying it, you'll really raise a Food Dump."

Donofrd Wu stated.

Yaara Ming frowned, squinting her eyes. DOnford Wu once said that the meaning of Food Dump was fierce and unbeatable, but now, it seems that he was lying. Food Dump wasn't anything good.

"Okay, whatever you say, I won't hit it. It's not hot anymore, eat some."

Donford Wu once again passed the food can in front of Yaara Ming.

"I really am not hungry."

Yaara Ming's tone became soft. Even though Donford Wu seemed so carefree, but in his bones was a strong person. For a person like him to be so caring was extremely rare.

Donford Wu placed the food can down, then took up the water can and passed it over. Yaara Ming raised her hand to take it, drinking a few mouthfuls.

Giving back the water can back to Donford Wu, Yaara Ming once again started talking.

"Shamans are split into nine phases, each phase has their corresponding ways of controlling the laws....."

"There's someone calling out."

Donford Wu heard a woman's hurried cry from the west side mountain path.

Yaara Ming also heard it, standing up, she walked out the cave.

"What is it?"

"Lue (Lv) was bitten by a poisonous snake."

The woman cried.

"I'll go down to take a look, I won't be back for a few days."

Yaara Ming told Donford Wu.

"Okay."

Even though Donford Wu replied with a happy manner, but he was still disappointed in his heart. To only have a taste of something good was a very frightening thing.

Yaara Ming turned around and went towards the south, after a few steps, her speed slowed down.

"I'll give you a piggy back ride down."

Donford Wu spoke out.

Yaara Ming frowned, staring angrily at him for a moment, then turned around, leaving at great speeds.

Flipping over the dried pants, Donford Wu went back into the cave to lay down. Right now he was worried what the Earth clan would do because of the messaging party. If the Earth clan immediately declared war at the Gold clan, then he wouldn't be able to do anything.

At dawn, he went out once again, to get some bamboo for Food Dump.

For three continuous days, Yaara Ming didn't come back.

On the night of the third day, a Celestial Master of the Gold clan came by, but this person wasn't Charles Ming, but rather Uncle Xavier, which was that ball.

The ball came over for two reasons, one was to pass the news. The Earth clan didn't send out troops because of the messaging party, nor did they send out shamans to get revenge. There was also their ideas for his situation.

The second was to give him a lifesaving thing.....

Chapter 33 A Boring Life

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-33/>

Chapter 33 A Boring Life

A belt, a belt made from soft metals, the width was about the size of four fingers. At one end was a round loop, while at the other was a tiger head hook.

“What is this for?”

Donford Wu weighed the belt in his hand, the belt wasn’t heavy, about one point five to two kilograms. It didn’t seem all too ancient either, it shined a bright yellow, not like something that has gone through many years.

“This copper belt was refined by our Gold Qi. Wear it around your waist, if you meet any dangerous situation then press on it.”

The ball pointed at the tiger head that stuck out.

“What’ll happen if I press it?”

Donford Wu went closer to the fire. Looking closely at the tiger head hook, he discovered that the tiger’s nose wasn’t one with the tiger head hook.

“When you press it, we’ll know when you encounter a dangerous situation. So we’ll try to pull you back to the capital in the shortest amount of time possible.”

The ball stated.

“Really?”

Donford Wu still held a strand of doubt. He didn’t know the exact distance between here and the capital. But from the three day walk to the tribe, and from the night and day ride to the capital on a quick horse, the distant shouldn’t be any less than five hundred kilometers. He knew that the Gold clan could control metals, but he wouldn’t have thought that they could control metals from such a distance.

“We three were busy making this belt these few days, exhausting a lot of our Gold Qi, don’t look down on it.”

The ball directly said.

"I'm not looking down on it. I just wouldn't have thought that the three Celestial Masters could be so amazing. To actually control the laws from a few hundred kilometers away."

Donford Wu hurriedly backtracked. Even though the ball liked praise, but he wouldn't exaggerate what he says. This belt must have used up a lot of their sweat and tears.

There wasn't anyone who didn't like praise. Hearing this, the ball's expression turned a bit embarrassed.

"To us, this wasn't something easy to do, but because you are our Celestial Master of the White Tiger, no matter what price we have to pay, we must guarantee your safety."

Donford Wu once again said a word of thanks. Following, he told the ball what kind of theories he and Yaara Ming came out with. The ball was the least hard working in the three Celestial Master, but also the best at talking, he wanted to hear the ball's opinion on the matter.

"These few days, we also thought about it, with your kind of situation, there isn't any suitable way of cultivating Qi right now. In the end, we might just have to reference and meld the other four clan's. We'll slowly think of something for this matter, you don't have to worry about it."

The ball stated.

"Sorry for the bother Celestial Master."

Donford Wu cupped his hands and thanked him.

"You are the son in law of Third Brother, and also our Celestial Master of the White Tiger. When there isn't any outsiders, you don't need to have such courtesies."

The ball waved his hand.

"Uncle Xavier."

Donford Wu once again cupped his hands.

The ball nodded, satisfied.

"When there is nothing to do, don't just curl up in this cave. Go around the place, and there is no need to avoid the villagers. The more you don't want them to see, the more curious they are."

Donford Wu nodded his head in response.

"Okay, you go to sleep, I'll be going back."

The ball turned around, walking towards the entrance of the cave.

Donford Wu also went out to send him away, Food Dump also staggered out with him.

There was a moon tonight, so it wasn't too dark. You could see that after the ball lifted up into the air, he didn't leave immediately, but went a few rounds around the surrounding area. The goal of this was most likely to observe the surrounding geography. So that if anything happens, he could safely pull Donford Wu out of here. If he didn't confirm the altitude of the mountains, then when he pulled Donford Wu out, Donford Wu would likely crash into a few rather tall mountains.

Only until the ball left far away, did Donford Wu return to the cave. The amount of protection and help the three Gold clan Celestial Masters gave him was no small about. To call them stick and ball in his mind wasn't right, from now on, he will call them Uncle Gabriel and Uncle Xaiver.

With this life saving belt, he was completely reassured. He wasn't worried about his safety for a single moment, what he was worried about was Yaara Ming. Yaara Ming used to have a mask, so other people couldn't see her face, meaning she was rather safe. But now that she has taken off her mask, horny bastards would start coming. Even though Charles Ming killed one off, but who could guarantee that another one wouldn't appear. If another one appears, then how should he respond to that? This was a problem he was always worried about. The problems he now faced wasn't really a problem.

Early in the morning and in the evening was the best time to hunt.

Early in the morning, Donford Wu woke up, taking his bow and arrows with him to hunt. Food Dump followed him a few steps, then stopped, turning

around, it wanted to go back.

Donford Wu ran up and carried it. Bringing it towards the south. He couldn't always just let Food Dump stay in the cave, he should let it know about its surrounding.

Walking for two or three kilometers. Donford Wu put Food Dump down. At this time, Food Dump already couldn't see the cave, so it could only follow him. "Hn"ing while it walked.

Hunting needed silence and stealth. Bringing Food Dump naturally wouldn't have any great harvest. But bringing it out for some exercise was good, it helped him to digest. But Food Dump was lazy, after a few steps, it wasn't willing to walk anymore. But it didn't dare stay in the forest by itself, seeing Donford Wu not waiting for it, it could only keep on jogging at small speeds to keep up.

Without enough luck, he couldn't hunt anything. At least, he could only go to the river and catch a few fish. The fishes' alertness was worse than fish in modern times, but their heads were a lot larger. Only needing the right angle of penetration through the water, it was easy to catch them.

Going back to the cave, he discovered Yaara Ming came by.

After a few days of recharging his sperm count, he really missed Yaara Ming. But Yaara Ming had her usual serious and cold expression, making it hard for him to make any intimate actions.

Yaara Ming came here to give him some corn. After hearing what happened last night, she didn't stay long, turning around to go down the mountain.

He didn't tell Yaara Ming about the belt, if Yaara Ming knew the use of the belt. If there really was any kind of emergency, then she would definitely push it for him.

"If there isn't anything to do, then you could sit down for a while."

Donford Wu hardened his face to ask for her to stay.

"There was someone who was bitten by a snake in the village, it needs close caring."

Yaara Ming didn't stop, even to the point of not looking back.

“Give me the Inner Dan the black bear gave to Food Dump.”

Donford Wu cried out again.

Yaara Ming turned her around and came back, giving him the purple Inner Dan.

“How do I use this?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Just give it to it to swallow.”

Yaara Ming turned around to leave.

Sending Yaara Ming off with his gaze, Donford Wu sighed out. The reason he sighed was of many reasons. Disappointment from Yaara Ming’s absence, the introspection of himself that kept wanting to do naughty things, and the helplessness of the difference of personality. Right now, you could say Yaara Ming was that of the treating each other like guests type, and he was the ungentlemanly type.

Soldiers like training their bodies. Most of them did it for crazily increasing their endurance and strength. Since he couldn’t learn about controlling the laws for the moment, training his body became his first goal. Apart from leisurely times, he also brought Food Dump outside. Even though Food Dump loved eating, but it was extremely smart, it could understand what he was saying, even to the point of reading his gaze. This might have something to do with the Inner Dan it swallowed.

In the blink of an eye, a month passed. The weather turning cold. At this time, he only got what he wanted twice. It wasn’t known if Yaara Ming originally didn’t like this kind of stuff, or she thought she was just fulfilling her duty, doing it once every half a month. Making Donford Wu incomparably depressed.

Maybe because it was to keep things a secret, Charles Ming and they didn’t come over again. Every day, Donford Wu would go out, occasionally, he was able to hunt a rather large animal, so he brought it over to the village to eat and drink with everyone. Towards this kind of action, Yaara Ming kept an opposing attitude. Thinking that he lacked the seriousness of a shaman. But even though she was dissatisfied, she couldn’t do anything about it, saying it a few times,

Donford Wu completely treated it as wind blowing past his ear.

With the time flowing along, Donford Wu discovered a pattern. If there was a time he showed a large amount of hostility or resistance, then Yaara Ming would accompany him for a night. If he did well, then it would be the standard half a month.

Discovering the pattern, he didn't take advantage of it, but rather was a bit irritated. This meant that Yaara Ming treated this matter as her duty to comfort his emotions, and that she didn't like it herself. Since she didn't like it, the joy of it directly split in half.

Even though the joy split in half, but coming to half a month, he couldn't suppress it anymore. At this time, he discovered that Confucius was really logical. "Eating and gender." Eating and wanting another person was a person's nature, it was extremely hard to suppress. The most important thing was that this person was his wife, if he had a wife, then he could suppress it, but he really was too depressed.

One day at noon, Walda Ming came over, giving him a long sleeved shirt. Maybe because it was to avoid suspicion, after sending the clothes, Walda Ming left in a hurry. Before she left, she told him to never tell anyone that she sent him clothes.

Sending Walda Ming off with his gaze, Donford Wu felt a bit of regret. He was originally a country side child, he didn't like spending his whole day thinking about women. If he knew that it would come to this, he would have married Walda Ming. She knew how to cook and knew and to sew, she was pretty good.

There was some matters that people should only think about, but shouldn't really do it. The man of Walda Ming's life treated her well, hearing from the villagers, Walda Ming was pregnant again.

Even though the southern side wasn't wintry, but there was still distinct four seasons. Arriving at fall and winter, the temperature turned cool. These days, he has been chasing a herd of mountain goats, this herd had about a dozen. They stayed in the mountain north west of the village. The terrain there was very complicated, with a lot of sharp cliffs and drops, the mountain goats were extremely alert. They could discover danger just in time, borrowing the

extremely steep cliffs to escape.

The sun quickly went down the mountain. Donford Wu placed today's last hope on this herd of mountain goats. This herd of mountain goats had a very acute sense of smell, to stop them from smelling the odor from Food Dump's body, he left Food Dump at a faraway forest. He himself closed in on the cliff that the herd of mountain goats stayed at. This cliff was the shape of a horse shoe, going down was a bunch of messy rocks, about thirty to forty meters from the top of the cliff. He hid himself in grass and bushes directly at the south side. The herd of mountain goats were currently eating grass at the cliff in the direct north.

Mountain goats had a strange habit. Wherever it was dangerous, they would run there. The grass on flat lands they deliberately wouldn't eat, but they just loved eating the sparse grass on the cliffs. The most important thing was that the grass on the cliffs were the same as the flatlands. Maybe they thought that the harder it was to acquire, the better it was.

Donford Wu patiently looked at the mountain goats jumping around the cliff. The distance between him and them was about one hundred and fifty meters, right now, he could fire an arrow accurately at one hundred meters. As long as a mountain goat went into his range, he would immediately release an arrow. If he wanted to kill the mountain goat directly, then the distance absolutely couldn't be farther than fifty meters. But the alertness of mountain goats was too high. In fifty meters, it was highly likely for them to sense him. And this was a cliff, as long as he wounded the mountain goat, they'll fall to their deaths. The valley wasn't too deep, there was still something that could be counted as slope. He could go down and carry the mountain goat on his back.

The alpha goat went into his range, but he didn't release his arrow. Facing a group of animals, he normally wouldn't kill the leader. For one, they were normally the largest, and hardest to kill by arrows. Two they normally had the mission to protect the herd, killing the leader meant the whole group lost their protection.

Behind the alpha goat, was a female goat, pregnant, Donford Wu still didn't release his arrow.

Behind this female goat was a male goat. Currently sniffing the female goat's odor, its face was like it was drunk.

It shall be you, you bastard!

Donford Wu bent the bow, hurriedly shooting out. The bone arrow lodged itself into the male goat's jugular. Feeling pain, the male goat started to jump around crazily, right until it fell down the cliff. The other mountain goats were frightened, under the leadership of the alpha goat, the herd left the cliff, escaping into the northern forest.

Donford Wu carefully went down the valley. He first circled the valley, confirming that there wasn't any ambushing animals. Then went to mountain goat. Seeing the prey already dead, he took back the bone arrow and flinging the prey onto his back, preparing to climb back out.

The goat was around thirty kilograms, climbing while having it on his back was extremely difficult, when he reached the half point of the cliff, an arrow hit his right hand that held on the rock cliff.....

Chapter 34 Planting the Seeds of Disaster

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-34/>

Chapter 34 Planting the Seeds of Disaster

Donford Wu used his left hand to cling onto the rock wall, hurriedly turning his head to find the origin of the arrow. Only seeing that on top of the cliff behind him were four people standing. Three of them were large men holding bow and arrows, the other was a robe wearing shaman. Looking closely, it was that male shaman that tried to hit on Yaara Ming but was refused.

At this time, the male shaman backhanded slapped one of the large males. This man's bow didn't have an arrow in it, without asking, it was he who shot the arrow.

Just when Donford Wu thought the male shaman was stopping the villager from doing something stupid. The words that the male shaman spoke out to reprimand the male made a chill go up his spine.

"Dumb fuck, you can't leave arrow wounds on him."

Hearing the male shaman's words, Donford Wu used his teeth to pull the sharp arrow out. Stretching his five fingers to confirm that he could still climb, he immediately started to climb up the rock face. The male shaman intentionally wanted to kill him, since he couldn't make an illusion of him falling to death, he would most probably get rid of his body to destroy the evidence.

The time the male shaman spent pondering on what to do since he couldn't make an illusion of Donford Wu falling to death, was Donford Wu's time to escape. To be able to climb up to cliff was not only on his climbing speed, but also the amount of time the male shaman took to make a decision.

While climbing, Donford Wu didn't let go of the dead goat. Even though the dead goat would slow down his speed, but it could protect his back. In this kind of situation, where he had his back facing the enemies, was the correct decision. Right before he reached the top of the cliff, the dead goat helped him block an arrow, this arrow meant that his opponent has already decided to kill him, and

didn't care if he could make an illusion of him falling to death.

Climbing to the top of the cliff, Donford Wu immediately crawled down, climbing towards the trees, quickly pushing off the dead goat, he then squatted in a low posture and readied his bow to fire at one of the large men.

Waiting until the bow string was fully strung, he changed his mind. These villagers were all from another Gold clan village. Even though they committed crimes against him, he couldn't kill them, if not, after the male shaman went back, he would surely change what was right and wrong.

While he was thinking this thought, another feathered arrow came flying from the south. Skimming his face, it landed in the trunk of a large tree.

Donford Wu hurriedly crouched down. Moving back behind a boulder, he placed his bow to lean on the boulder, revealing a part of it to misdirect his opponents. He himself slowly moved away, while moving, he tried his best to not touch the grass and bushes, so that he wouldn't expose his position.

Crawling for a dozen something meters, Donford Wu went into a crouching position and carefully went forward. Even though his opponents were hiding in a forest, but from the directions of the arrows, he could determine where they hid themselves.

His opponents continuously let go feathered arrows near the area of the boulder. Donford Wu used this chance to go over, putting his back handed held dagger into a front handed position. Back hand was to slit the throat, and he didn't want to kill these people.

Getting close, Donford Wu rushed out. His dagger sinking into one of the large male's left arm, after it penetrated, the dagger was immediately taken out, sinking into the right arm.

The male shaman and the other two large men didn't think that Donford Wu would dare actively come over. Their minds in a daze. Donford Wu used this chance to strike out once again. Like a carbon copy, he pierced through another large male's arms. His heart was in flames, even though what he pierced through was the arms, when he pulled out the dagger, he added a turning force, expanding the wounds.

Seeing Donford Wu so fierce, the male shaman looked at his left and right then ran towards the empty lands behind him. The other large male took out a short knife from his waist, planning on slowing down Donford Wu.

Donford Wu didn't give his opponent the chance to set his mind. A feint, his opponent waved his short knife around to try to stop him, waiting until his opponent tilted towards the left, Donford Wu turned around and gave him a back kick square on his chest.

Unsteady, the male stumbled backwards, Donford Wu used this chance to continue his onslaught. His opponent messily swung his short knife around to protect himself, but he didn't think that this time, Donford Wu didn't use his two arms, but used his legs. Severe pain made him cry out and bend down. This time, the dagger in Donford Wu's hand drilled itself into the man's two arms.

The three males in serious pain, cried out in shrill agony. The male shaman was originally already prepared to face Donford Wu in a battle, hearing the shrill cries, his heart turned instead, turning around, he wanted to leave instead.

How could Donford Wu let him escape, with a flick of his wrist, he pinched the sharp end of the dagger, sending it flying.

Who would've thought that even though the male shaman had a bad mindset, would actually have some skill. In the midst of a mess, his copper pole deflected the dagger.

Deflecting the dagger, the male shaman restored his confidence, turning back around and rushing towards Donford Wu.

At this time, Donford Wu was currently determining where his dagger fell, waiting until he turned his head, the male shaman already reached him, his copper pole coming down hard.

Donford Wu tucked his head to dodge, using his momentum, the male shaman continued forward, his right knee rushing upwards, slamming towards Donford Wu's mouth.

Seeing the knee, Donford Wu's arms quickly came together, blocking his opponent's right knee. The knee wasn't comparable to the strength of two elbows, making it impossible to crash into Donford Wu's mouth.

Three times the male shaman lifted his knee, three times they were blocked by Donford Wu. Using the moment his opponent retracted his leg, Donford Wu pushed forward. At the same time the male shaman retreated, he slammed his copper pole into Donford Wu's back, Donford Wu bit down and endured the pain. Quickly turning around, he grabbed a bronze short knife that one of the men dropped on the ground.

"Shut up."

Donford Wu stabbed at the man that was crying out the worst.

This stab was into the thigh, not only did it not make him shut up, but made him scream even louder.

At this time, the male shaman was rushing at him once again. Giving a kick at one of the men that tried to grab his leg, he turned around to welcome the incoming male shaman.

Eyeing the short knife in Donford Wu's hand coming at him, the male shaman's right hand hurriedly waved around. Donford Wu only felt that his right hand was empty, the short knife already out of his grasp.

Only now did he remember that his opponent could control metal, just when he thought of this point, the short knife already turned around and was coming back, slashing towards his throat.

Donford Wu hurriedly titled backwards to dodge, the short knife scratching his chest. Embedding itself into a tree not too far away.

Not waiting for him to come back up, the male shaman already reached him, his right leg lifting up, a fierce stomp was aimed at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu couldn't evade quick enough, and was hit by his opponent. Seeing the copper pole in his opponents hand about to slam itself onto his head, he hurriedly grabbed his opponent's leg. Fiercely turning his body, he forced his opponent down to the ground. Not waiting for the male shaman to get up, Donford Wu clambered on top of him, his two fists raising into the air, aiming only for the face.

At first, the male tried to dodge and counterattack. After a few punches, he started to beg for mercy. Donford Wu had a stomach filled with anger, the more

he begged, the more violently he punched down. After a dozen of continuous punches, the male shaman's eyes and mouth were only opened a slit. His face filled with blood.

"Ah!"

A cry from behind made him turn his head around. Only seeing a large male holding a short knife that was trying to ambush him from behind. But was bitten on the leg by Food Dump.

After the cry, the large male used a kick to send Food Dump flying, Donford Wu used this chance to grab the male shaman's copper pole and slammed it into the large male that tried to ambush him. Then with another satisfying kick, he crushed his foot on the head of the male shaman that tried to lift his head up. Throwing away the copper pole, he ran towards the Food Dump that was five or six meters away, and hugged it. Food Dump was kicked stupid by the large male, struggling fiercely from the hug, crying out.

"I didn't take care of you for noting."

Donford Wu comforted Food Dump while giving kicks over to the large males that were trying to get up. Kicking them until their faces were filled with blood and didn't dare to raise their heads.

Just when Donford Wu picked up his dagger, he discovered a bunch of large men waving bats rushing over from the forest. He didn't recognize anyone of them, without asking, these were the villagers from the male shaman's village.

"We're over here, he killed our shaman, quickly kill him."

A person pretending to be dead seeing help, hurriedly cried out.

They came in a whole group, a full tens of people. Donford Wu quickly calculated his strength against theirs. Confirming that there wasn't any hope of winning, he hugged Food Dump wanting to escape. Bravery and stupidity was only separated by a thin line. To fight when it is worth it is bravery, to still fight when it isn't worth it is stupidity.

Right at this time, shouts came from the south eastern side, hearing the shouts, the amount of people that way weren't little by any chance.

Hearing the shouts, Donford Wu gave up on escaping, he was familiar with the voices of the men of the village, his people have come too.

After a few seconds, a bunch of strong men reached Donford Wu. The shovels and picks in their hands meant that when they heard the cries of pain, they directly came over from the mines.

“Donford, are you hurt.”

The bunch asked in concern. Donford Wu didn’t place himself highly, whenever there was something good to eat, he will tell them to eat with him, their relationships were quite good.

Donford Wu didn’t reply, the two group of men were already ready to move. The people in these times weren’t like the small bouts in modern times, shouting for half a day and they still didn’t make a move. They just shouted attack and directly started the battle.

“Listen to me!”

Donford Wu seeing the situation about to turn into a group fight, hurriedly shouted at the crowd.

The crowd hearing this stopped momentarily. Donford Wu raised his right hand to shout.

“I killed a mountain goat. Going down that cliff, I went to pick up my prey, but they used arrows to attack me while on top of the cliff!”

Speaking till here, Donford Wu then pointed his finger at the male crying out the loudest.

“It was him, it was him who released the arrow!”

“It wasn’t me, it wasn’t me, it was George (Guo), it was George.”

The male pointed at another male that died from unconsciousness.

Donford Wu smiled.

Now the situation was clear, Donford Wu was the victim while they were the shameless ambushers. Under the villagers on Donford Wu’s side’s jeers and cheers. The opposing village carried their own villagers and half dead shaman,

and with shameful faces, walked towards the north.

Some villagers carried Donford Wu, the others carried his prey and bow and arrows. Singing a lyric less song on the way back home.

Donford Wu emphasized many times that he could walk, but the villagers just didn't let him walk. Only until he said.

"If you guys carry me like this, then would the villagers think I'm injured?"

Only after this did the men let him down.

On the way back, Donford Wu was carrying Food Dump. Food Dump already went back to its silent self, but its neck seemed to be sprained, always tilting to the side. After half a day of continuous massages its head finally became upright again.

Arriving back at the village, they started to roast the goat. Some of it was sliced off to boil in a vat. Roasting was the oldest way of cooking, at this period time, roasting took more than half of the ways of cooking.

When the crowd was busy outside. Yaara Ming was inside the house bandaging Donford Wu up. Hearing Donford Wu's story, Yaara Ming wasn't happy for him, but rather had a heart filled with worry.

"Food Dump should be in the capital right now, how did you explain to them?"

"What you're worried about is not my life or death, but rather Food Dump was seen by other people?"

Donford Wu frowned while looking at Yaara Ming. The reason why the male shaman tried to kill him today was, except for not liking him, was because he was jealous of his relationship with Yaara Ming.

"With Food Dump exposed, the news would spread. My dad and them patrolled the capital day night, just to trick our enemies. Now, everything that they did all went to waste."

Yaara Ming sighed out.

"Food Dump was picked up by me. I'm the most familiar with its eating habits, so me feeding it is also the most suitable. Would this reason work?"

Donford Wu went away from his sitting position and stood up.

"We could only say that."

Yaara Ming stated.

Donford Wu looked directly at Yaara Ming. Yaara Ming was worrying about Food Dump being seen by the enemy would be bad for him. In reality, she was worried about him. But he wasn't used to Yaara Ming's way of worrying. If she said things more directly, it wouldn't kill her.

With the goat meat cooked, the crowd outside shouted for him. Donford Wu liked lively things, so he went out to eat goat meat with the crowd. Goat meat was a delicacy in modern times, so was it in ancient times, ordinary people couldn't eat it. The crowd owing Donford Wu for the meat and hearing his courageous story today, made them slowly take out their hidden rice wine for him to drink. Donford Wu made it so that he didn't drink too much, he was afraid that when he got drunk, he would spout nonsense, it wouldn't be good if he accidentally said that he had wanted to run.....

Chapter 35 Going

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-35/>

Chapter 35 Going

Waiting until he was drunk as fuck, Donford Wu stopped drinking. Leading Food Dump up the mountain, he stumbled forward. Everyone wanted to send him off, but were all shooed back.

Arriving back at the cave, Donford Wu fell down and started sleeping. Because he had too much to drink, his tongue and mouth felt extremely dry, but there wasn't anyone here to pour him some water. His thirst was so incredible that he got up and got a water can himself and walked out the cave. Arriving at the entrance of the cave, wind blew over him, his irritability reducing by a slight margin. The alcohol getting to his head, he fell down on the ground with sleep following close behind.

Not long after, he felt someone take away the water can in his hand, and after another moment of time, he was helped up in a sitting position, the water can brushing against his lips. Feeling the cold touch of fresh water, Donford Wu opened his mouth to drink a few mouthfuls. His head hitting the ground again, he started sleeping.

Around four or five in the morning, Donford Wu was awoken by the cold wind of the early morning. Flipping around, he sat up. Drinking too much rice wine could make a person drunk, but what's good about it that it doesn't get into the head too much. After waking up, his clarity was immediately restored.

At this time, the sky was already hazily brightened. Food Dump was sleeping beside him, and that water can was placed a few steps away atop of a boulder.

Donford Wu got up and walked over to pick up the water can, pressing it against his lips to take a drink of water. He then suddenly smelt that a strong flowery fragrance was lingering in the can, a bit like the smell of modern perfumes.

Yaara Ming doesn't use cosmetics, the female villagers also didn't use these

kinds of things. They aren't even able to afford a bar of soap, so how could they use cosmetics.

Yesterday night, the person who poured water for him wasn't Yaara Ming, nor was it the women of the village, who was this person?

In a heart of confusion, Donford Wu tried hard to remember the scene of drinking water yesterday night. Yesterday, he really wasn't happy with Yaara Ming's reaction, when he was drinking, he had a bit of washing his worries away use to it. Nearing the end, he was practically unconscious, he really couldn't remember the details, only remembering someone helping him up and drinking water.

Pondering to this point, Donford Wu moved his head to smell his own two shoulders, discovering that there was a faint fragrance on him.

Donford Wu used his hands to hug his head, trying his best to remember. It was very dark yesterday, he couldn't see the person's face, or it could be that he just didn't open his eyelids wide enough. He really couldn't remember who this person was, but he vaguely remembered when he was drinking water, there was hair brushing against his face, with long hair, it should be a woman.

Would it be a monster?! Donford Wu shivered in his heart. This place was in the middle of nowhere, and deep in the night, why would there be a woman running around the mountain. Last time he ran into a fox spirit, if he really is that unlucky, it should some kind of spirit this time too.

Very quickly he calmed down, even if the woman really was a monster, she didn't have any evil intentions. If not, then she wouldn't have gave him water to drink.

Standing there for a long time, Donford Wu once again put the water can near his nose. Without smoking for so long, his sense of smell improved lots, he could smell that the fragrance only concentrated at the water can's right handle. On the other parts of the water can, he couldn't smell this scent. Which meant that yesterday night, that woman held the water can's left handle over. At this moment, the water can still had half a can filled with fresh water, about the amount he drank yesterday night. Even with only the remaining water and the ceramic can, it weighs a total of two point five to three kilograms. A regular

woman couldn't hold two point five to three kilograms with only one hand and walk this far. Even if this woman wasn't a monster, she definitely wouldn't be a regular woman.

Coming to here, the clues broke off, he couldn't think of anything else. Donford Wu had a sense of loss, she helped him bring water when he needed it the most, and he didn't even say a word of thanks to this person.

Because of the wound on his hand, he didn't go out to hunt, only laying in the cave in a daze.

He didn't go out, he laid in the cave the whole day, Food Dump ate the remaining fruits that were picked a few days ago.

Dawn, Yaara Ming came, bringing a box of medicine to change his bandages.

"You're a shaman, you need to have a shaman's seriousness, drink less from now on."

Yaara Ming untied the bandage on Donford Wu's right arm.

Donford Wu didn't say anything.

"You broke Chris's (Zhu) nose and broke three of his teeth."

Yaara Ming stated.

"How do you know?"

Donford Wu's nose flared a bit, the Chris Yaara Ming spoke about was that male shaman's name without a doubt.

"I went to their village, the villagers there already notified his father. His father is a Great Sage of the Sedimentary Tribe and is coming here right now."

Donford Wu stared at Yaara Ming, not saying anything.

"Tomorrow, I'll come by again, tell his father the reasons. But you were too heavy handed, his father seeing him like this will surely be mad."

Yaara Ming lowered her head to apply medicine on Donford Wu's wound.

Donford Wu clenched his right fist.

"He ambushed me from behind yesterday. If I fell down from that arrow, then

what you'll be seeing today is my corpse. With my kind of temper, I should have killed him. The reason why I didn't was because I didn't want to make trouble for you, and right now you are actually angry at me for being too heavy handed?"

The wounds on his right hand still hasn't closed, with this clench, fresh blood once again came flowing out. Yaara Ming seeing this hurriedly used a bandage to stop the blood.

Donford Wu took his right hand away and angrily got up.

"The reason I'm staying here is not because I have nowhere to go, it is because you are here."

"Don't be angry, I didn't have that kind of intention. I was only worried that your identity would be exposed. If you're exposed, then it'll be extremely dangerous."

Yaara Ming quickly explained.

"What I hoped more was that you would worry if I needed someone to look after me after I turned drunk, worry if I could cook by myself with a wound on my hand!"

Donford Wu spoke out.

"Anyone home?"

A male voice sounded out from outside the cave.

Hearing this sound surprised Donford Wu. Quickly turning his head to look at the cave entrance, he only saw a purple robed middle age man filled with smiles standing outside the cave. This person's age was around forty five or six years old, an average build, wide nose and round face, he had a very kind expression.

Seeing the purple robe, Donford Wu's heart froze for a bit, only Celestial Masters have the qualifications to wear a purple robe, and he saw the three Celestial Masters of the Gold clan before, this person wasn't from the Gold clan.

"May I come in?"

The middle aged man asked with a smile.

Donford Wu turned his head to look at Yaara Ming, Yaara Ming had wrinkles

covering her forehead, eyebrows furrowing.

“It’s an Earth clan Celestial Master.”

“Thank you, thank you.”

The middle aged man answered his own question, walking inside.

Determining this visitor was an enemy and not a friend, Donford Wu started to ponder if he should rush out. Even though this person had a kind face, but he absolutely wasn’t a kind person.

After walking in the cave, the middle aged man lifted his robe and bent down to sit. But he didn’t sit on the ground, but rather a stone chair quickly sprouted out from the ground.

“Yun, Philip (Ping) Yun. Your name?”

The middle aged man smiled while looking at Donford Wu.

“What are you doing here in our Gold clan?”

Yaara Ming directly asked.

“To invite your husband to be a guest at our Earth clan.”

The Earth clan Celestial Master named Philip Yun smiled.

Donford Wu was currently evaluating the risks of rushing out. This Earth Clan Celestial Master could instantly form a stone chair from rock, this meant his control over the laws was extremely strong. He absolutely had the power to seal the cave entrance, but he didn’t do this. This was a show of his confidence, to possibility of being able to rush out was very small.

“We don’t welcome you, go.”

Yaara Ming used her copper pole to point at Philip Yun.

Philip Yun smiled, reaching out his jade pole, he pushed aside Yaara Ming’s copper pole. Right now, he was only holding a small white jade rabbit, this jade pole was formed from this jade rabbit.”

“If we have to try for a bit to have a nice talk, then you guys can try.”

Philip Yun once again changed his jade pole into a jade rabbit, softly caressing

it in his hand.

“What do you want to do?”

Donford Wu blocked the Yaara Ming that wanted to rush forward.

“I said it already, to invite you as a guest at our Earth clan.”

Philip Yun tilted his head to look at the currently snoring Food Dump.

“I can follow you, but you must guarantee the safety of my wife.”

Donford Wu stated. This Philip Yun was a fake gentleman without doubt, but a fake gentleman was at least better than an open villain, at least they would still care about their dignity.

“Only braindead people like Jack Yun would dare harass Charles Ming’s daughter.”

Philip Yun bent down, reaching out his hand to call for Food Dump.

“Don’t touch it.”

Yaara Ming picked up Food Dump.

“Okay, okay, okay, no touching. Is this little Pi Xiu your Bear King?”

Philip Yun looked at the Food Dump in Yaara Ming’s embrace with slight interest.

Yaara Ming nervously looked at Donford Wu, Donford Wu shook his head at her, telling her not to make a move too easily.

“Take your clothes off.”

Philip Ming smiled, saying.

Hearing this, Donford Wu furrowed his brows, taking out his dagger to prepare to fight for his life.

Philip Yun waved his hand.

“Youngsters are always this impetuous. I wasn’t talking about her, I was talking about you. I do have to at least confirm that you are the person we want to invite.”

Only now did Donford Wu understand this person wanted to see if he had a

white tiger tattoo. Retracting his dagger, he lifted his shirt up.

Who would've thought that Philip Yun would actually shake his head.

"If you really are the guest we want to invite, Gabriel and them would surely give you metal armor or a metal belt."

Donford Wu secretly cursed, this person was smart. The lifesaving belt the three Gold clan Celestial Masters gave him became an identification item for this person.

"Did I guess right?"

Philip Yun tilted his head to the side, smiling while asking.

Donford Wu took off the belt around his waist.

"Do what you want to do most, wrap it around your wife."

Philip Yun smiled.

Donford Wu did just as he said.

"Let her go."

Donford Wu stated.

"Sure, the Bear King can also go with her too. Before leaving, do you have something to say to her?"

Philip Yun from start to finish kept on smiling.

Donford Wu turned around to look at Yaara Ming. Yaara Ming bit her lips and made a glare at him, indicating she wanted to fight.

"We can't beat him, bring Food Dump back to the capital, tell your dad what happened here. Since they didn't immediately kill me, after going to the Earth clan, they won't kill me either. They'll keep me there to make a deal with you guys. If their terms are too overboard, then don't care about me, after dying, there'll be a new Celestial Master of the White Tiger."

Donford Wu told Yaara Ming.

"We aren't giving out any conditions, but we also aren't going to officially say that he is at our Earth clan. As long as you guys don't come messing around,

then we won't chop his hands and feet off."

Philip Yun looked at Yaara Ming with a slight smile.

Yaara Ming's whole body shook, once again giving a fighting glare at Donford Wu.

Donford Wu shook his head, turning around to look at Philip Yun.

"Can I send her off?"

"Of course."

Philip Yun stood up, the stone chair immediately disappearing.

Donford Wu pulled Yaara Ming outside, arriving at the entrance, Yaara Ming turned around and went back into the cave, putting Food Dump down, she picked up the bandages in the medicine box, crying while wrapping it around Donford Wu's right hand.

"Quick, go."

Donford Wu picked up Food Dump with one hand, and pulled Yaara Ming out the cave with the other. Exiting the cave, only now did they discover that Philip Yun didn't come by himself. Above the cave, on the south road, the west and north trees all had one person. All of them wearing purple robes.

The four outside seeing Donford Wu and Yaara Ming come out, instantly surrounded them, Philip Yun raised his hand, indicating for them that there was no need to be nervous.

Donford Wu took off his vest, pouching Food Dump in it, next, he used cloth stripes to tightly tie it to Yaara Ming's body. Following, he gave his dagger to Yaara Ming.

"The next time you're going to see him, I'm afraid that it'll be after ten years. You don't have anything to say to him?"

Philip Yun came over, grinning at Yaara Ming.

Donford Wu grimly smiled, shaking his head. This sentence that Philip Yun spoke was clearly to misdirect Yaara Ming. Don't say ten years, even if it's twenty or thirty years, they wouldn't release him.

“I know I’m not a good wife.....”

Yaara Ming cried to the point of not being form a word.

“Food Dump didn’t eat its fill today, remember to fed it again.”

Donford Wu pressed the tiger head on the Copper belt, raising his head to stroke Food Dump’s head.

“I’ll wait for your return.”

Just when Yaara Ming’s finished speaking, she was raised into the air. After four or five kilometers, her speed increased even more, without asking, it was the two people cooperating, after seven or eight kilometers, the third Gold clan Celestial Master’s Gold Qi arrived, the speed increasing even more, Yaara Ming and Food Dump disappeared just like that.

“Okay, they’re faraway now.”

Philip Yun patted Donford Wu’s shoulder.

“We should also be going too.....”

Chapter 36 Trade

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-36/>

Chapter 36 Trade

“Let’s go.”

Donford Wu nodded.

“Sorry about this.....”

Something hit the back of Donford Wu’s head, in an instant, he fainted.

Waiting until he woke up, his surroundings completely changed. The lush and dense forest and the familiar mountain cave disappeared, what replaced it was a wooden roof and a white bed curtains. On top of him was a pink blanket, the surroundings filled with a faint sawdust smell.

“My deepest apologies for hitting you unconscious yesterday night.”

From the south came Philip Yun’s voice.

Donford Wu sat up, only seeing here was a very large room. On the east side were a zither and various instruments, on the west side was a small table for Go. The small table was next to a window, and on top of that was a wooden shelf. On the shelf was different kinds of vases and cans. In the middle of the room was a wooden chair, Philip Yun was sitting by a round table. On top of the table was a copper teapot, from its mouth, hot air came whistling out.

Determining his environment, Donford Wu’s feet touched the ground and got up. He didn’t ask where he was, the two copper basin filled with red hot charcoal meant he was in the cold north.

Philip Yun pointed at a seat opposite of him, Donford Wu went over and sat down.

“Come and drink some tea.”

Philip Yun raised the pot and poured tea for Donford Wu. At this time, he already changed into a winter clothing, something similar to cotton, but even softer and lighter.

Donford Wu looked carefully at the tea cup, the tea in the teacup was very muddled, apart from tea leaves, there was also some kind of powder in it. According to the smell, it should be some kind of edible grains.

Philip Yun put down the copper teapot, smiling lightly at Donford Wu.

With a single gulp, Donford Wu finished off the tea, following, he started examining the tea cup in his hands. The tea cup was a jaded white color, made of porcelain, this meant that the Xia dynasty already had chinaware.

“Another?”

Philip Yun asked.

“Sure.”

Donford Wu put down the tea cup, the tea in this period of time might have been cooked, so it was rather thick.

“I really admire you.”

Philip Yun raised the pot and poured tea for Donford Wu.

“Why is that?”

Donford Wu asked.

“Because I like smart people.”

Philip Ming stated while smiling.

“I like things direct. Tell me, how are you planning to handle me?”

Donford Wu cupped the teacup in his hands, outside there was the whistles of the wind. The weather was very cold. Because there was a wind blocking white curtain over the window, he couldn't see if it was currently snowing.

“How do you hope we handle you?”

Philip Yun put down the teapot.

“Would you do as I say?”

Donford Wu smiled. They kidnapped him clearly meant they treated him as a hostage. The reason was to make the Gold clan obedient. This was much smarter than the assassination attempt from before. Since he was a hostage, his life

naturally wouldn't be in danger, but what kind of treatment he would get was hard to say.

"No, what I say doesn't go either."

Philip Yun after shaking his head, lifted up his own tea cup.

"Last night, I tested your blood. You aren't a pure Good blood, but rather a very strange kind of blood. Your kind of blood has no way to cultivate the Gold clan's ways of controlling the laws."

"I know."

Donford Wu moved his itchy right hand.

"Take some of our healing Dan Pills, your wound should heal in three days."

Philip Ming said.

"Thank you."

Donford Wu thanked him. Philip Yun from appearing till now, was always polite to him, in it, there was definitely some falseness in it. But excluding this falseness, he felt that Philip Yun's attitude most likely had a different goal.

"You're welcome, may I ask you some questions?"

Philip Ming asked.

"I know nothing about the Gold clan."

Donford Wu shook his head.

"I'm not interested in them, you aren't a Gold clansmen, where are you from?"

Philip Yun questioned.

"I don't want to lie to you."

Donford Wu stated. No matter if Philip Yun was honest or not, at least he tries to be polite. When responding to him, he also doesn't want to be too impolite.

"Good!"

Philip Yun wasn't mad, but rather nodded with satisfaction.

"May I ask you a few questions?"

Donford Wu asked.

“Please, speak.”

Philip Ming raised his hand.

“Why did you kidnap me?”

Donford Wu ask.

Philip Ming raised his eyebrows, taking a look at Donford Wu, not answering immediately.

A cloud of doubt raised in Donford Wu’s heart. To him, this question was the simplest question. Without question, the reason the Earth clan captured him was to make the Gold clan obedient, but seeing Philip Yun’s expression, it didn’t seem to be as simple as he thought.

After the moment of silence, Philip Yun opened his mouth to speak.

“I also don’t want to lie to you.”

Donford Wu nodded his head. Even though Philip Yun didn’t answer his question, but without a doubt, indirectly confirmed that the reason they captured him was not as simply as making the Gold clan obedient, but there should also be other reasons.

“How will you handle me?”

Donford Wu inquired.

“We’ll send you to a safe place, the environment over there isn’t that great, also a food shortage. But you’ll be safe there, and not lonely.”

Philip Yun talking to here had a slight meaning to his smile.

“They have woman there.”

“Why are you being so polite to me?”

Donford Wu asked the thing he didn’t understand the most.

“I want to make a trade with you.”

Philip Yun said.

“I have nothing to trade with.”

Donford Wu picked up the tea cup, drinking a mouth full of grain tea.

Philip Yun shook his head.

“For now you don’t, but late on you might. If there is a day that I fall into your hands, then I hope you can let me and my family live. In return, I can let you stay here for three days. There is fine food here, and also young woman.”

“Since you predict that there would be such a day, why not just kill me?”

Donford Wu asked, not understanding.

“I have no power over this thing, if I could choose, I would have killed you directly yesterday night, and not bring you back here.”

Philip Yun shook his head in seriousness.

“You could say it was an accident.”

Donford Wu told him.

“I couldn’t bear the results of an accident.”

Philip Yun shook his head.

“Will you agree to my deal?”

“For such a good thing, of course I’ll agree.”

Donford Wu smiled.

Philip Yun raised his right palm.

“Aren’t you afraid I might back out of it?”

Donford Wu asked.

“I am, that’s why when I have the chance, I’ll still ask master to kill you.”

Philip Yun smiled.

Donford Wu laughed a bit. Raising his wounded right hand to hit the other’s hand. According to Philip Yun’s words, it wasn’t hard to see that Philip Yun already knew that he would bring danger, advocating for him to be killed immediately. But Philip Yun’s master, which should be the Celestial Master of the Skies and Earth, decided to keep him. As for the reason for not killing him, except for the Gold clan reason, there should be other reasons too.

“If you agree to it, then I want to add something.”

Philip Yun once again raised the copper teapot and poured tea for Donford Wu.

“Tell me.”

Donford Wu smiled, every person has a flaw, Philip Yun too, this person was greedy.

“The place you are going is going to be extremely hard. There, you won’t have the same treatment as you have today, but rather the total opposite. You might encounter many troubles, as long as it doesn’t harm the interests of the Eartht clan, then I can help you once.”

Philip Yun stated.

“Why not many times?”

Donford Wu smiled, questioning.

“Because I can’t always be passing by.”

Philip Ming smiled.

Donford Wu also smiled, no matter if this person was good or bad, at least it was always more joyful to exchange words with a smarter person than a dumb one.

“If the thing you want me to do will harm the interests of the other four clans, then I won’t do it.”

Donford Wu stated.

“It won’t.”

Philip Yun took a small ball around the size of a red bean from the jade rabbit. Passing it over to Donford Wu.

“If you need it, then throw it into a fire, I’ll come by very quickly.”

Donford Wu received the extremely small jade ball. Taking off the bandages on his right hand, he stuffed it inside the wound.

Even if a person enduring pain doesn’t furrow his brows, the people observing

would.

"You already tried to urge your master, too bad your opinion wasn't taken in. Relax, even if you ask me to kill your master, I'll try my best."

Donford Wu smiled.

Hearing this, Philip Yun's expression changed drastically, his face revealing a violent expression. Angrily glaring at Donford Wu, he bit his teeth down, one word at a time.

"I really should have killed you."

"If you could choose, you would have already killed me."

Donford Wu shrugged, opening his hands.

After tens of seconds of staring, Philip Ming moved his gaze and sighed out a long breath. Next, he got up to stand.

"You were hit in the back of the head, so you're dizzy and can't walk, so of course you can't go out."

"Thank you."

Donford Wu replied. The words Philip Yun spoke was the reason he would tell others so that he could stay for three days.

"I must hurry to the Celestial Master Manor. You take care of yourself."

Philip Ming walked towards the exit.

"Where is this?"

Donford Wu asked.

"The capital."

Philip Yun walking towards the door reached out his hand to pull on the handles. After opening the doors, he turned his head to say.

"We never had this conversation."

"Of course."

Donford Wu responded.

Philip Yun walked out.

“Get someone for me.”

Donford Wu shouted.

Philip Yun didn’t reply, only closing the door behind him.

Just when Philip Yun opened the door, he saw fluttering snowflakes coming down. And when he heard Philip Yun leaving, there was sound from his footsteps, the amount of snow outside was already very thick. In this kind of situation, it would leave footsteps if he wanted escape. The only results would be to be immediately sent to the hard environment, his three days of comfort would be gone.

Confirming he had no way to escape. Donford Wu picked up the copper teapot and poured himself some tea. Holding the teacup, he was frowning while thinking. The Gold clan would definitely think of something to save him, but the first thing they would have to know is his location. Before the Gold clan could save him, the only thing he can do is to guarantee his own live. The reason he is still alive right now is because of that Celestial Master of the Skies and Earth. As for why he would let him live, this was what he needed to solve. Because every action he makes would most likely be known by the Celestial Master of the Skies and Earth. Was it an act of confidence or just pretending to be stupid? These two ideas wouldn’t work, his age wouldn’t be small, his disciple was already this sly, the master would surely be even cleverer. Any kind of fake actions would most likely be seen through, he shouldn’t pretend to do anything and just do what he is supposed to.

Not long after, a knocking sound sounded out from the outside. Donford Wu responded with a shout. A woman wearing a linen dress came walking in. This woman was about twenty years old, was pretty good looking. Her figure was also not bad. The cloth covering her breast only covered about a sixth of it, the linen dress could let light through, letting everything to be seen.

This woman probably did specialized in doing this, even if she wasn’t the slightest bit of embarrassed, she pretend to be. Walking in, she closed the door behind her. Walking north towards the bed, she stumbled over. When she walked, her face hung a tempting and charming smile.

"It's already way into winter and you're wearing so little, aren't you cold?"

Donford Wu frowned while asking. The reason why he told Philip Yun to get someone for him was because he was "dizzy" and couldn't go out, he should at least get an errand boy. Who would've thought that Philip Yun would send him this kind of thing.

"No."

The woman lowered her head in slight embarrassment, walking over to the side of the bed and sitting down.

"If you're not cold then don't go lay in the bed, go and get something for me to eat....."

Chapter 37 Stain

<http://novelcow.com/chapter-37/>

Chapter 37 Stain

The woman froze, sitting there, not moving.

“I’m hungry, go out and get something for me to eat.”

Donford Wu waved his hand at the woman.

This time, the woman heard clearly, leaving the bed side, she went in front of Donford Wu.

“What do you want to eat?”

“The best.”

Donford Wu stated. Philip Yun just said that they had fine food here, he was curious on what exactly were these fine foods.

“Soup meat is the best.”

The woman responded.

“Then that, go.”

Donford Wu waved his hand to shoo her away.

The woman walked towards the door, while she strode over there, she routinely looked back over her head. She had accompanied many guests, but this was the first time that in front of a beauty, only wanted to eat something.

Not even five minutes have passed and the woman came back, bringing a few servant looking people with her. The person walking in the front held a strange looking copper ware, a bit like a small round “Ding”, the people behind held various sized wooden buckets.

A stone slab, on top was the copperware, adding water, adding charcoal. Seeing the charcoal, Donford WU understood, this was a hotpot, the Xia dynasty already had hotpots.

The meat were in slices. One person eating while a lot of people were serving

him. Donford Wu didn't like being served by people, calling off the few servants, he sat there eating. Apart from being a bit slow to heat up, it was pretty similar to hotpots in modern times. Too bad at this time there wasn't any spices, he couldn't indulge to the fullest.

"Come over, come over."

Donford Wu gestured at the youthful woman standing by the door.

This woman just went outside for a spin, her face cold to being white as snow, her lips now a bit purple. Hearing Donford Wu call her, she pulled a long face coming over, not knowing what order would Donford Wu give her.

"Is there any alcohol?"

Donford Wu questioned.

"There is, yes, there is."

The woman continuously responded, turning around, she went to the west wall's wooden shelf.

"What kind would you like to drink?"

"The best."

Donford Wu stated.

Hearing this, she raised her heels to take a porcelain vase from the left corner of the shelf. The vase was a bit larger than modern wine bottles, more like the one vases you put flower in, on top of it was a cap.

Donford Wu threw away the tea in his tea cup and indicated for the woman to pour the alcohol.

The woman poured it for him. Donford Wu raised the originally teacup that turned into a shot cup, discovering the alcohol was crystal clear. A person with money and power really is different, the alcohol waste was all filtered away. Tasting a bit, the alcohol level wasn't very high, rather fresh.

"What's your name?"

Donford asked the woman who was standing by his side, holding the wine bottle. The woman held the bottle with quite the professional posture, with a

glance, it was easy to know that she had done these kinds of things before.

“Lily (Li) Yao.”

The woman replied.

“You can sit down too.”

Donford Wu pointed at the seat opposite of him.

Lily Yao shook her head, standing there, not moving.

“Sit and eat!”

Donford Wu raised his voice.

Lily Yao slid into the seat, Donford Wu passed over a set of chopsticks, indicating for her to eat with her own hands.

Wearing nice clothes doesn’t mean eating very well, Lily Yao very much liked lamb meat. Donford Wu intentionally didn’t look at her, letting her eat freely.

Waiting until Lily Yao completely relaxed, Donford Wu started to pour alcohol for her, Lily Yao took the bottle and poured for Donford Wu first.

Controlling emotions was a must in the tool belt of a commanding officer in the military. Very quickly, he built a good relationship with Lily Yao. From her mouth, he got to know that this place was an inn for officials. Officials from all around coming to the capital would come here for temporary rest and stay. In this place was around a dozen more women like her, all slaves. Their jobs were to accompany the officials that came from the outside.

Donford Wu once heard from Yaara Ming that the Xia dynasty had slaves, but he didn’t know where the slaves came from. Only after asking Lily Yao did he know that slaves mostly came from wars between tribes. The losing side would be killed or taken in as slaves. The descendants of the slaves would also be slaves, this made up most of the slave population. Aside from them, criminals would also be punished into slaves. Civilians offending powerful people and shamans would all be punished to become slaves. All in all, if one is not careful, they’ll become slaves.

Asking the amount of slaves, Lily Yao replied with a lot, but she couldn’t say the exact amount.

Royalty and different ranked shamans all had different amount of slaves. Slaves do the hardest jobs, no freedom, no vacations, and of course no income. They didn't wish for these things, they only wanted to live and if they could, they would be satisfied. This was because their owners could casually decide their life and death. Killing a slave was as normal as killing chicken and slaughtering dogs. Anytime their heads could fall to the ground.

Asking to why they didn't resist. Lily Yao's reply made him unable to laugh or cry. Compared to those slaves there were killed, for them to be able to live was already very fortunate.

After thinking carefully about it, Donford Wu understood their attitude on this kind of matter. People have a side where they are greedy to the point of no return. Taking an inch, they'll try to get a foot, getting a foot, they would try to get a yard, forever unsatisfied. But there was also a side of humanity that felt content. When they were accustomed to suppression and pressure, getting an occasional very small gift would already be enough to make them extremely grateful.

Eating and drinking till his fill, Donford Wu opened the door and went out. At this time, it was still snowing. Only after walking out the room did he discover the layout of this place was like a square inside a square, the four sides all having rooms. Once he went out, the doors on the rooms to the two sides were instantly pulled open, two purple robed Earth clan Celestial Masters staring at him with alertness.

Donford Wu untied his pants and pissed by the side of the door. Afterwards, under the angry gaze of the two Celestial Masters, he went back inside.

"Get someone to clean up, I want to eat something else for lunch."

Donford Wu told Lily Yao.

Lily Yao replied with a sound, wrapping clothes tightly around herself, she walked out.

Donford Wu went back to the bed to lay down. Philip Yun once said, the place he will be going three days later wouldn't have a too good of an environment and the food there would be in shortage, but there was woman. To fulfil these three conditions would most likely be an area where slaves lived. If it was really

like that, the Gold clan would never be able to find him, because they wouldn't think that the Earth clan would place someone as important as him in a place with slaves.

Not long after, there was someone to clean up, Donford Wu shouted at them.

"I want roasted meat for lunch."

There was someone who replied. Waiting until all of them left, Lily Yao climbed up on top of him, beginning to loosen her clothes.

"Lay down and don't move."

Donford Wu pushed her down, pulling the blanket over to cover her.

Lily Yao waited a bit, seeing Donford Wu not moving, she reached over to pull on him.

"If you move again, I'll hit you."

Donford Wu put on a blank face.

Lily Yao didn't dare move.

Donford Wu put his hands behind his head, thinking on what to do. He couldn't hope to leave it all to the Gold clan, he must also think of a way to escape. At the moment, the Earth clan was very nervous with him, so he couldn't escape now. If he wanted to escape, he would have to wait for a period of time.

Eating roasted meat for lunch, Donford Wu first let Lily Yao eat her fill and shooed her away. Next, he placed the roasted meat into alcohol jars. When he left here, he would most likely have to suffer starvation, he should prepare some rations.

Waiting until the night, Lily Yao came back. Telling him that she was an errand girl with special services. He let Lily Yao become the boss of this place, he wanted thick clothes to defend against the cold. Even though Philip Yun didn't come by, but he was as familiar with this place as the back of his hands, so naturally he wouldn't refuse his requests. The next morning, Lily Yao brought thick clothing over.

This day, he ate roasted meat for all three meals. The clothes for this time of the year were mostly made of oakum, making the clothes as hard as a board. But

this was exactly what he wanted, after putting in beef, no one would suspect him. Putting in several kilograms of beef inside, Donford Wu opened the doors and sat by the entrance. He wanted to borrow the cold wind to blow away the scent of beef, guaranteeing no one would discover the beef.

At the last day, Donford Wu slept all day long. The night arriving, so did Lily Yao.

“What is it?”

Donford Wu asked in suspicion. Lily Yao’s face didn’t have a trace of color, her body shivering, almost to the point where she would fall down.

Lily Yao locked her gaze on Donford Wu, after a few seconds, she knelt down. Hitting her head on the ground continuously at DOnford Wu.

“Please save me, save me.”

Donford Wu quickly went over, helping Lily Yao up.

“What happened?”

“If you don’t touch me tonight, the Celestial Masters will kill me.”

Lily Yao shook incredibly.

“Do you know who I am?”

Donford Wu brought Lily Yao over to a seat.

Lily Yao’s mental state still in shambles, shook her head in a loss.

“I am their captive, I was kidnapped by them over here, I can’t help you.”

Donford Wu shook his head saying.

“As long as you let me service you, I can live.”

Lily Yao’s eyes had that of a pitiful beggar.

Donford Wu didn’t speak. He wouldn’t have thought that Philip Yun and his crew would do such a thing. Right now, he was thinking why they would do this, and also the results of touching this female slave and not touching her.

Seeing him not speaking, Lily Yao once again kneeled down, crying while begging, her tears fell down as streams.

Donford Wu didn't move, they were Celestial Masters with respectable statuses. Not some bored rich kid. They wouldn't do this kind of thing just for fun, there must be a deeper meaning behind this.

"Have you served a shaman before?"

Donford Wu asked.

Lily Yao first froze, after she stopped crying, she shook her head.

Donford Wu understood. A shaman in these times were the workers of the deities. Naturally they wouldn't touch women like Lily Yao, at least not in plain sight. This was because they cared about their own reputation. The reason why they did this was to ruin his reputation, as long as he touched Lily Yao, then it would a stain on his history forever.

Discovering their sinister thoughts, Donford Wu slowly shook his head. Lily Yao was pitiful and without help, he really wanted to save her, but he couldn't. He couldn't overcome this hurdle in his heart. If they loved each other, then there wouldn't be anything wrong, but if they didn't have any feelings, then he absolutely couldn't do anything. If not, what was the difference between him and an animal? Not only that, he had to think about the Gold clan, he was the Gold clan's Celestial Master of the White Tiger, if something happened to him, then the Gold clan would be ashamed with him.

"Don't cry, I'll help you."

Donford Wu helped Lily Yao up.

Lily Yao brightened, saying her thanks over and over again.

"Bring some alcohol over, come and drink with me. "

Donford Wu sat down on a chair next to the table.

Lily Yao joyously brought over a jug of alcohol, pouring a cupful for Donford Wu, also pouring some for herself.

Donford Wu finished it all in one go, Lily Yao followed him and drank it in one go too.

Pouring again, drinking again, still pouring, and still drinking.

Not long after, the jug of alcohol was half empty. Donford Wu stood up and walked over behind Lily Yao, placing his arms over her shoulders.

“Why are your eyes red?”

Lily Yao tilted her head to look at Donford Wu.

“Do you want to leave from here?”

Donford Wu whispered into her ears.

“I do, but they won’t let me go.”

Lily Yao shook her head.

“I’ll send you off.”

Donford Wu closed his eyes and with a spin, broke Lily Yun’s neck.....